22102010060

ZPB.41 (2)

The Extravagant Prentices with their Lasses at a Taverne Frollick.

THE

English Rogue:

CONTINUED

IN THE

LIFE

OF

MERITON LATROON,

And other Extravagants.

COMPREHENDING THE

MOST EMINENT CHEATS

OF

Most Trades and Professions.

Read, *but do'nt* Practice : *for the Author findes,*
They which live Honest *have most quiet mindes.*

The Second Part.

Licensed *Feb.* 22. 1668.

London, Printed for *Francis Kirkman*, and are to be sold at his Shop over against the Custome-House, in *Thames-street*, 1671.

ZPB.41(2)

WELLCOME
HISTORICAL
MEDICAL
LIBRARY

The Epiſtle

DEDICATORY

TO THE

BOOK-SELLERS

OF

LONDON.

Gentlemen,

IT hath been one of the greateſt Errors in moſt Authors to think by their high Dedications to advance their Books, when as on the contrary, I have known ſome of the better ſort of Books (though Dedicated to Worſhipful, Honorable, Illuſtrious, and Reverend Patrons; nay and ſometimes to Majeſty it ſelf) inſtead of being preferred in Bookſellers ſhops (and accoraing to their merit bound in Turkyor Murrey Leather gilt, and richly adorned) only to be found in looſe

ſheets at Cooks and Tobacco-ſhops, diſpoſed under greaſie Pies, to ſtop Muſtard-pots, and to wrap up Mundungoes Tobacco, or at beſt (after more coſt than was intended by the Author in damaſking and figuring it) uſed in Truncks and Hat-caſes: and all this hath happened becauſe there was not a fit choice of a powerfull Book-ſeller, which out of profit and intereſt might prefer and advance the ſame.

Now that I might not run into the ſame Error, and have the like misfortune, being very well acquainted how much prejudice or profit I may receive in your ſtifling and ſlighting, or preferring and advancing this Piece, and I (being deſirous that it ſhould ſell, for to that end in part was it written and Printed) therefore make choice of you for my Patrons and Protectors.

Gentlemen, I hope what hath been particularly written in this Book of your Trade, will not be offenſive to you in general, neither that any particular Perſon will be offended, unleſs ſuch as are guilty; and for their ſakes it was written, that they may ſee their vicious enormities, and amend them.

Though all theſe miſdemeanors are charged upon the ſcore of one man, as being acted by one; yet i'le aſſure you I know not any one perſon guilty of all, though it is poſſible that

they are all true, or elſe our Extravagant *(who recounts his ſtory) gives miſinformation: and I for my own part have ſo much Charity to believe, that there are ſeveral of your Trade honeſt-men, and not at all guilty of any thing here Charged on our* Extravagants *Maſter: To thoſe I ſuppoſe, I rather do a kindneſs than a prejudice in unfolding the Myſterious Knaveries of the Trade, and in requital I hope they will be my Protectors, in preferring this Piece, not only to their Cuſtomers in* London, *but to their Chapmen in the Countrey, and thereby ſave me the trouble of it: And as for thoſe who being conſcious of their own guilt, are offended with what is here written, and out of revenge will refuſe to protect or ſell this Piece, I am well enough ſatisfied, and by their refuſal or ſlighting, both I and the Book-buyer ſhall by their anger conclude their guilt.*

And Gentlemen, it is very well known to you, that the firſt part of this book hath (notwithſtanding many oppoſitions) done its buſineſs, being generally liked and approved of; and I am told (by the ingenious) that this will not come ſhort of the former in pleaſure, and exceed it in profit: and therefore I doubt not of the ſale, and I hope it will be ſo far from ſtaining your Reputations, that on the contrary, you may reap credit; beſides, as you

may gain credit, ſo you will have profit by the ſale, and that I know will be a very great inducement to you.

For both which cauſes I hope you will not refuſe me your aſſiſtance, which I know may be powerful; and I ſhall for the future diſcourſe your civilities, and at preſent ſubſcribe myſelf

Your friend and Servant,

Fra. Kirkman.

The Preface to the Reader.

GENTLEMEN,

THE Firſt Part of this Book being ſo generally well received, I was induced to procure it to be proſecuted in a ſecond; and to that end I often ſolicited the Author to proceed according to his promiſe; but he was deterred for ſeveral reaſons, the moſt prevalent whereof he told me was this, That he had reaped a great deal of ignominy by writing of that; for many people were ſo ignorant, as to believe that it was a true and exact account of the Authors life; eſpecially after they had upon acquaintance or inquiry found that he was indeed guilty of ſome petty waggeries which are therein recited; and therefore concluding him guilty of the whole, lookt on him as a dangerous perſon, and ſhunned and avoided his company, leſt they ſhould be damaged thereby, or at leaſtwiſe ſcandalized; others gazing on him at a diſtance with the eyes of wonder.

Now let me tell you that though I was

wholly a ſtranger to the Author, when he writ that Book, yet I have been ſince ſo well acquainted with him, that I can directly clear him from the guilt of moſt of thoſe enormities contained therein. For in the firſt place, it is ſufficiently known to me, and many perſons more, that he was never upon the Padd: for I am confident he was never guilty of ſo baſe a valour, as either to Rob a houſe, or bid a man ſtand on the Road. Next as to the Cheats, eſpecially thoſe in Gaming; though he profeſſes ſo much knowledge therein, in his Book; yet I am ſure of this, (let him be never ſo well acquainted in the Theory) that he is ignorant in the practical part thereof, having been the cheated, not the Cheater, of a good round ſum of mony, which he loſt at Dice in my preſence, and to my prejudice; and I believe, that although (what he did write in the firſt part of the Book, *Chapter* 25. about his loſs at Dice;) that might be in jeſt, yet now he might ſay in earneſt. The Lines are theſe,

I thought my ſelf ſecure, for I could top,
By which I've forc'd ſome Citt's to leave
their ſhop.
I palm'd, and put the change upon them too,
I only ſtudied how I might undo.

But now I'm met with, 'tis but juſt I ſee, (be.
That he which others cheats ſhould cheated

He being clear of theſe two crimes, Thieving and Cheating (which are the moſt Capital,) I know not why he ſhould be avoided for any other, though we ſuppoſe him guilty of many female frauds, his inclination leading him to be a lover (though Mercurial and unconſtant) of the Female ſex; with whom I ſuppoſe he may have acted ſome of the adventures by him recited, and thoſe paſſages, with what others he thought or heard of: and whereof many perſons in this our age are guilty, he having methodiz'd, is the main part of his Book; and the intent of his writing, it was to ſhew the deformity of vice, that every one might ſhun it. The two lines which he placed on the Title page of many of his Books, ſufficiently demonſtrating the Authors intent. The words are theſe,

Read, but don't practice: ſince the Author finds
They which live honeſt, have moſt quiet minds.

Thus, although the intent of his writing was good, and the effects proved anſwerable in the ſale of the Book, yet could I not procure him to proceed, though I offered him my aſſiſtance, in acquainting him with my experience; but all

would not do: Wherefore I applyed my ſelf to another, a brother of the ſame trade; a profeſſed Author, and one who hath been happy enough in the ſale of many of his writings; him I courted into a complyance with my deſire, and perſwaded to begin to write ſomewhat to the purpoſe; I propoſing only to him to give an account of the knavery of many trades and profeſſions. I gave him my beſt inſtructions, and laid my ground-work well enough, as I hoped to have him proceed: But ſo ſoon as he knew my intention of making his writing a part of (by joyning it to) *The Rogue*, with ſome anger he left it, and reſuſed to proceed.

He having thus laid down the Cudgels, I then took them up my ſelf, and thoſe looſe ſcribled papers which I had written for his inſtruction to proceed upon, I viewed over, and after ſome ſmall correction they ſerve for the greateſt part of this Treatiſe.

In what I have written; I begin firſt with my ſelf (as we all ought to do when we intend to amend,) and give an account of the greateſt *Knaveries* which I know, or can at preſent call to mind, there are or have been committed in two trades; the one a Scrivener, in which I was bred, and the other a Book-ſeller, in which I

have been now above twelve years, on and off, a profeſſed Practitioner. When I was a child I was intended to be a *Church-man* in profeſſion, as well as name; but the time proving unhappy, and no encouragement for that profeſſion, and my Father aiming at ſome imployment that might be profitable, and knowing the trade of a Scrivener to be ſo, was for that cauſe enduced to place me with a Maſter of that quality, (though my inclination led me rather to the Book-ſelling Employ.) Being thus placed out, I not only endeavoured to learn my calling; but alſo at all ſpare times plyed my Book; and though I had a very great employment under my Maſter, yet I made a ſhift not only to read much, and learn the *French* and other Languages, but to write ſomewhat for the Preſs. And now I am ſpeaking of my Maſter (in regard in part of this Book, I give an account of the *Knaveries* of the Scriveners trade) it will be convenient to ſay ſomewhat to clear him from any guilt therein, or elſe it may be ſuppoſed that I mean him: But they that think ſo are much miſtaken, for he then was, and ſtill is a ſolid, honeſt, ſober Citizen; and not in the leaſt as I know of, guilty

of any miſdemeanour in his practice: and it was my folly, and not his fault to leave him: for after about five years ſervice with him, I went to another, and from thence forward it was that I gained the firſt experience of the *Knavery* of that profeſſion; and ſince then, not only by keeping company with ſome of them, but alſo by my own experience and practice, (though not as the Cheater, but *Cheated*,) I can truly write a *Probatum eſt* to what I have written of that Profeſſion, and if occaſion were, give a *Clavis* or *Key*, to diſcover moſt, if not all of thoſe ſeveral pieces of *Knavery* I have here diſcourſed of: And thus much for the Scrivener.

And as for the Book-ſellers trade, my inclination leading me to it very much, I did about twelve years ago publickly profeſs it, in keeping a Shop, wherein I uſed as well the Bookſelling, as the Scriveners quality; but having knaves to deal with, of whom I bought ſome part of my ware, I ſoon left off the Bookſelling trade, only keeping to the other; in which I ſufficiently profited my ſelf; And I defie all the world to charge me with any *Knavery* in the whole courſe of my practice; which during the time of great

buildings at the Eaſt part of *London*, (where I dwelt) I gained much; but that ceaſing, and the tide of employment ebbing at the Eaſt part, I thought it would be convenient to remove Weſtward, eſpecially, his Majeſty being then happily and glorioufly returned, and fixed at that end of the Town. And therefore taking a houſe and ſhop, that I might have two ſtrings to my Bow, I again profeſſed both Trades, of a Scrivener and Bookſeller. I now thought my ſelf wiſe enough to deal with the Bookſellers; but I ſoon found my ſelf deceived, to my coſt, for I was drawn in by ſome of that profeſſion to be concern'd in printing of Play-books; in which, I having skill, and much affection to the matter, willingly engaged. I, for my part, only printed three, which were my own proper Copies; and they, (though I diſſuaded them there-from) made choice of the beſt Playes then extant; though the Copies were other mens, I thought this criminal, but they made a tuſh at it.

The owner of the Copies hearing of this wrong done to them, gained a Warrant to ſeize them: My Partners ſecured theirs, and one of them had ſo much cunning *Knavery* as to come to me, and ſell me his ſhare, and within a day or

two after delivery, directed the Officers (who had warrant to ſeize) to my houſe, where they at once took from me 1400 Play-books; the value whereof is eaſily computed to be conſiderable.

This happening in time of much buſineſs (for my Mother was then lately dead, and my Father dying) I could not look after the recovery of my books, which I heard were divided, and I never to this day had ſatisfaction of one or other. My Father ſoon after dying, and leaving me a plentifull eſtate, I reſolved to quit all Trading in general, retire into the Country, and lead a Contemplative life; (for indeed I never had a love for any Trade, hating the buſineſs in general, and only uſed them for a livelyhood). I having thus given out, had ſeveral offers from Book-ſellers to buy my books (which were of a conſiderable value, being valued at ſome hundreds of pounds;) He who had ſo lately Cheated me, did amongſt others deſire to havè them, and did ingeniouſly confeſs the trick he had lately put upon me: and this his ingenious confeſſion he made as an argument for me to truſt him with the reſt of my Books: Though I ſhould have made this uſe of his confeſſion, not to deal

with him further, yet he promiſing all honeſty for the future, I again agreed to truſt him with my whole Stock, and thereby did I agree to cheat my ſelf; for though it was his fault to cheat me the firſt time, yet now it was only mine, to let him do it after ſo fair a knowledge as he did; for though he lived ſome years after that, yet I could never get any conſiderable returns for my Stock of Books, and he in the late great Contagion dying, was conſiderably indebted to me, and I hoping to get what he owed me, ventured to poſſeſs my ſelf of his Eſtate, and pay ſeveral Debts which he owed to others: but they proved ſo many, and his Eſtate ſo ſmall, that I was worſe than I was before; and this gave me ſo ſenſible a ſqueeze that I yet am ſenſible of.

And this is the only occaſion that hath again made me engage my ſelf in the Book-ſelling employment: which although I have now uſed above twelve years, and in that time laid out ſeveral hundreds of pounds in Printing, yet I was never engaged in printing any Book that was another mans Propriety, except when I was drawn in by the three Bookſellers, and as I have already told you, and which was ſo much to my loſs: And as for my Trading in the Scriveners em-

ployment, where it is uſual for moſt of that Trade to keep the beſt bargains of Lands and Houſes for themſelves, and put off the worſt to their Cuſtomers, I have not done ſo, but it hath been my unhappineſs to have the worſt bargains of houſes of any, which I ſtill keep: and though they did coſt me many hundreds of pounds, yet they are rather a trouble, than any addition to the reſt of my eſtate. And if I was ever guilty of dealing hardly with, or griping any of my Clients when I was a publick practitioner, (as I cannot remember any ſuch action,) I am ſure I have been (ſince I left the publick Profeſſion of a Scrivener) worſe ſerved by ſome of that quality, with whom I have had ſome particular dealing.

I have given you this account of my tranſactions, to acquaint you how *Roguiſhly* I have been dealt with, and that I am (and muſt needs be, out of all theſe experiences) able to give you a conſiderable account of the greateſt *Knaveries* and *Cheats* of theſe two Trades. And what hath coſt me ſo dear, I here (for publick good) preſent to you for a ſmall price; for I'le aſſure you, I have oftentimes had a Fee given me for my Advice in one of theſe many Caſes were opened by the Scrivener, and that part of this Book (if

well conſidered and underſtood) may and will be of very great uſe and conſequence to any perſon who hath any converſe in the world. Beſides the *Knaveries* and *Cheats* of theſe two Trades, you have thoſe of ſeveral others, as a *Barber-chyrurgeon*, a *Tapſter*, a *Cook*, a *Lock-ſmith*, *Taylor*, *Baker*, *Plaiſterer*, *Drugſter*, and many others; and in pourtraying of them I have not affected words but matter, I have written as I would have ſpoken, and as much in little as poſſibly I could. Here is that which (I hope) will pleaſe all humours, both the frollick and the ſerious, nay ſome of the factious too will buy this Part as well as the firſt; and to make that out, I'le tell you a late, but true ſtory.

The Author of the firſt Part being with a Friend at an Ale-houſe, drinking at a publick fire (there being alſo at the ſame fire two Crop-ear'd fellows) he accidentally was talking about the Book, and relating to his Friend the trouble he under-went at the firſt publiſhing thereof, by reaſon it was not then licenſed. Yes, ſaid his Friend, I remember that ſome of the Clergy were very much offended, and you as well as the Printers, were like to have ſuffered Impriſonment. Why, what was the matter; ſaid one of theſe fellows, what were the Biſhops troubled at it? Yes, ſaid

the Author, I was forced to abſent my ſelf for ſome dayes, till the heat of the matter was over: having ſaid thus, he left the room at preſent, and the two men taking the opportunity of his abſence, enquired of his Friend what he was, and what was the reaſon of the Biſhops anger? To this his Friend replyed, that the Author was a very honeſt man, (which they in their terms interpret *Fanatick*) and that all the reaſon of the trouble was, becauſe it was not Licenſed. Well, ſaid one of them, can he help me to ſome of them? Yes, ſaid his Friend: and by this time the Author being returned, he was acquainted by his Friend with the requeſt of the two ſtrangers, and they likewiſe again deſiring of it, he furniſhed them at preſent with a dozen, for which he had a greater price than uſual, and then they deſired to have more to give to their friends, thinking to have found ſome Fanatick Doctrine: ſo eager are theſe ſort of people to buy any thing that is unlicenſed, following the Proverb, *that ſtolen meat is ſweeteſt*: But I believe they were not very well pleaſed when they, or their Fanatick brethren (to whom they preſented them) had peruſed them: but it is poſſible that (though they were miſtaken in the main) yet they might be well enough pleaſed in the private reading, and that as in a

Looking-glaſs they might ſee ſome of thoſe crimes lively repreſented, whereof they had been guilty.

Thus I ſay this Book hath been bought up by all ſorts of people, and I my ſelf at the firſt publiſhing the firſt Part, preſented one of them to an Acquaintance of mine, who (I believe) had been knaviſh enough, and a Preacher of ſeveral perſwaſions, he read it over, and at my next ſight of him I asked him his opinion of it? Truly, ſaid he, there are many various Cheats and Rogueries, but if the Author had my experience and practice, he might write a Book ten times bigger, and more full of brave Cheats, and conſiderable Rogueries, things worth attempting, whereas theſe are but fooliſh and idle, and for the moſt part unprofitable. I who was partly acquainted with many paſſages of his life, knew he ſpake true then, and have here in this ſecond Part had a touch at him, but far ſhort of what I know of him, it not being convenient to tell truth at all times. I have likewiſe met with ſeveral other adventurers and tranſactions in the world, where I (through the franknes and eaſineſs of my nature) have ſtill come off the abuſed party; part of which I have here ſprinkled up and down, and the reſt I reſerve till more time and conveniency to publiſh among other things in a third Part.

And this Book though (by reaſon of the extraordinarineſs of ſome paſſages) it may ſeem a Romance, yet I'le aſſure ye there is nothing but the truth, naked as ſhe ought to be, in plain colours; for like the firſt Draught of a Painter, I have only laid on the dead colours without any flouriſhes, varniſhes, or adornments; and though that be the firſt, yet it is commonly the greateſt piece of Art, and ſeldom mended or altered, but ſpoiled: and ſo in my writing of this, I have not varied in any thing from my firſt thoughts, which have been ſwift and full of matter, and therefore need not in ſo plain a caſe any embelliſhments, ſo that here you ſhall hardly meet with a piece of Poetry, and that which is, is juſt to the matter, not ſorted or ſtrained, but natural and free; neither have I borrowed any Sentences out of any Authors, to embelliſh and add luſtre to my writing: what I have done, (and that is but little) I will tell you of.

And now I have told you in general what you are to expect, I will likewiſe give you a ſhort account of my particular method, and ſo conclude. Firſt, the Author of the firſt Part having left his *Rogue* a married man, and an Inhabitant in the *Eaſt-Indies*, I was obliged to lay

my Scene there, and go thither to find him, where I give an account not only of his manner of living, and how he ſpent his time there, but alſo of the Government, Manners, and Cuſtoms, both Eccleſiaſtical and Civil of the Countrey; and I have ſpent one whole long Chapter in acquainting you with their Religion, which though it may ſeem ſtrange and extravagant, yet it is no more than the truth, as I can prove from good Authors from whence I had it. I likewiſe cauſe our *Rogue* to ſum up his fore-paſſed life, with ſome ſmall reflections, and I bring into his company four male, and two female Companions, as good Boys and Girls as ever twang'd. They coming from *England* only on a Ramble, are thought very fit Companions, and the lives of theſe travellers are related to our *Rogue* by one of the Company. This relation is full of variety, and though long, yet (I hope) will not be thought tedious nor improper: for the length I muſt crave pardon, for I could not well avoid it, and I was forced (though improperly enough) to make breaks to divide it into Chapters.

I have not only taken pains in deſcribing the Laws, Manners, and Cuſtoms of the Natives with my Pen, but for your greater pleaſure and ſatisfaction, the Graver hath been at work to

preſent you the Figure of them, the moſt lively I could contrive in ſo narrow a compaſs. You have likewiſe another Figure of all our Lads and Laſſes together in one of their Tavern Frolicks.

I have had ſo much work to do in bringing theſe Companions to our *Rogue* in the *Indies*, and relating what they are (in which I have ſpent much oyl and labour) that I cannot this bout, bring him over to *England* as is expected; but I'le aſſure you (if you accept this, as I queſtion not) that I ſhall hereafter attend him through other Countries, and with a great Train of Attendants or Companions bring him again to his native Countrey of *Ireland*, and ſo to *England*, where he and his Company may do ſuch acts as ſhall raiſe wonder in the Readers. But let this ſuffice at preſent.

And now I have almoſt done with the Preface, which though it be long, yet I like it better to have it ſo, than to fill up a Sheet or two of Paper with *Commendatory Verſes*, which ſome Authors covet, and are very proud of, and rather than go without, will write themſelves: This I could have done or procured, but eſteeming all that can be written in that nature to be

nothing, unleſs the reader approves the Book, who is now ſo wiſe as not to truſt to another mans judgment, I therefore declined that, and I hope when the Preface is read over, it will not be thought wholly impertinent; for I have therein laid down ſome reaſons for this my manner of writing. But ſome ignorant Readers commonly skip over the Preface, running greedily to the matter, and ſo they will uſe me; and having read the Book will ſay, that I had better have ſpared my ſelf the trouble and coſt, for here is nothing but what they already are acquainted with. To you who are ſo knowing and well experienced, I anſwer you with this Requeſt, That you will do as much for publick good, as I have intended by writing this (and I hope done) and in order thereunto write and publiſh your Experiences, and I promiſe you I'le be a Cuſtomer for one of them, and encourage others to be ſo; and though it may not be ſo well as what I have written, (that is, ſo full of profitable Experiences) yet it will be a hard caſe if there be not ſomewhat worth the knowing: If my judgment tells me that it is better, I'le acknowledge it, and I and the other Readers ſhall be the more obliged to you for your pains; and I had rather gain experience and knowledge thus by reading then dealing with

ſome of you, and be out-witted and ſnapt. Though it is true, that that wit is beſt that is bought, yet I know a man may pay too dear for it, (as hitherto I have done) and therefore, and to the end that other men may learn by my harms (as the Latine Sentence is, *Felix quem faciunt aliena pericula cautum*, He is happy that is warn'd by other mens harms) I have written this which I am ſure may be profitable, and I hope not in the leaſt hurtful. Wherefore Reader, I pray put on Charity for thy Spectacles, and read on.

Yours, F. K.

A. an East India Iunck
B. an Indian House Flatt and Terrased on the Top
C. an Indian Coach drawne with Oxen.
D. an Indian Waggon drawne with Oxen.
E. Persee Buriall place.
F. Banians Washing.
G. Banians Worship under greene trees.
H. the Banians Marriages.
I. the Banians Burialls.

THE

ENGLISH ROGUE

Continued in the Life of

MERITON LATROON,

And other

EXTRAVAGANTS.

Part II.

CHAP. I.

He discourses of the manner of Government, of the Inhabitants of the East-Indies ; *a small Voyage by Sea, where he is in danger by a Tempest, and a* Malabar *Man of War, but escapes both ; he makes some rambles into the Country, and returning home has some reflections on his fore passed life.*

I Was now arrived at the Meridian of my age, and enjoyed such a plenty of every thing, that I soon forgot the many miseries I had lately suffered, since my banishment from *England*. I governed my Family with a most absolute command, and

received a willing obedience as well from my Wife, as all our Servants, and during the ſtay of our *Engliſh* Ships, I gained very much by entertaining my Country-men with neceſſaries. I kept ſo punctual a correſpondence with the *Banian* Merchants, that I could command any thing; and by their means found the way of Trading, by which I conſiderably enriched my ſelf; ſo that at the departure of the *Engliſh* Fleet, I having caſt up an account of my Eſtate, found that I had gained above 2000 Rupees, (which being the Country money, and worth about 2 *s.* a piece, amounted to 200 *l.*) alſo I had a good parcel of Diamonds, beſides thoſe I had cheated the *Banian* of at my firſt arrival; ſeveral other Commodities I had by me, which (with my Houſhold-ſtuff which was conſiderable) did in all amount to a great value. The Fleet being departed, the chief of our Trading ceaſed, and now it was vacation time, and I (hating idleneſs, and ſomewhat weary of my Wives company) being deſirous of Novelty, ſet out to view the Country: to which end taking money with me, and all other neceſſaries, I hired an *Indian* Coach, which is a kind of a Chariot with two wheels, and will hold about four perſons; this Coach was drawn with two Oxen, who will travel about thirty miles a day: my charge was not much, for about eighteen-pence a day paid my Coach-man, and kept his Cattel. Thus did I ramble about the Country, viſiting other of my acquaintance, where I had a full enjoyment of every thing the Country afforded: for we had not only the Country drink called *Toddee*, which is made of the juyce of ſeveral

Trees, and *Punch* which is made of Rack-lime, or lime-water, Sugar, Spices, and ſometimes the addition of *Amber-greeſe*, but we likewiſe drank great quantities of *Perſian* Wine, which is much like Claret, and brought from that Country in Bottles. Theſe were our drinks whereof we drank plentifully, and oftentimes to exceſs; our meat was chiefly Rice, with Beans, and Turkeys, Beef and Mutton, and ſometimes Veal and Lamb; this was my ordinary diet, but the *Banians* eat no fleſh, accounting it criminal, it being contrary to their Religion to kill any thing; the chieſeſt exerciſe we had was playing at Nine-pins, a game I was well acquainted with in *England*, and therefore could well enough deal with the Natives, though they were expert therein. Though I pleaſed my ſelf in theſe things, yet there was ſtill wanting the only thing which had alwayes made my life pleaſant to me, and that was the company of Women, for without their pleaſing ſociety in a full enjoyment I reckoned I had nothing, and therefore upon every turn found them out; but I muſt now be contented with the Natives, who although they are not ſo fair as the women of our *European* Countries, yet they may paſs well enough, for their complexions are commonly of a tawny hiew, but they are richly adorned with Pearl and other Jewels; I ſpeak of thoſe who were Mercenary. There is no Town but had two or three of theſe *Brothel-houſes*, which were allowed of; neither was it any diſgrace to be ſeen therein; the handſomeſt women are here: the Matron of the houſe is furniſhed with ſeveral, who ſhe purchaſes

ſometimes of their own Parents, who ſell them, not accounting it an injury to diſpoſe them to this purpoſe. Theſe old Bawds are as cunning as thoſe of our Country, for they will ſell a Maidenhead two or three times over, for which they will ſometimes have twenty or thirty Rupees, according to the goodneſs of the Commodity, and good will of the purchaſer, who ſhall enjoy his bargain for two or three dayes or nights together, either at their lodgings, or at home at their own houſes; neither do their Wives dare to contradict their Husbands therein, for they will oftentimes bring home one of theſe Laſſes, and lodge them in a Cot in the ſame room with their Wives, and lye with them as often as they pleaſe, and when they have done with them ſend them home again.

I tryed ſeveral of theſe *Bona Roba's*, who pleaſed me very well, for what they wanted in beauty they ſupplyed in reſpect and willingneſs to comply with and pleaſe me in all my deſires; and though many times they have the Pox, by reaſon of their heat and activity, yet they value it not, for they are ſo well acquainted and furniſhed with remedies, that they ſoon cure themſelves, and the men who accompany them: my ramble being finiſhed, I returned home, and though my Wife knew I had been at ſeveral of theſe *Brothels*, yet I was joyfully received and welcomed by her. We keeping a publick houſe, had all ſorts of gueſts, and now being at leiſure I diſcourſed with ſeveral of the *Brammanes* who are their Prieſts, who informed me not only of the Civil but Eccleſiaſtical Government of the Nation: for

though I ſuppoſed them Heathens, yet I found that they followed a rule in their livings to which they ſtrictly tied themſelves: They in general gave me this account, that they are governed by a Kingly Monarch, who is called the *Great Mogul*, he is abſolute in his Dominions, and all his ſubjects are his ſlaves; all the Land and Houſes throughout his Dominions are his own, and the Inhabitants or occupiers are only his Tenants, and pay a valuable rent for what they enjoy, which is annually collected by Officers to that purpoſe appointed, and paid into his Exchequer; this he beſtows at his own pleaſure, or ſpends in making War with his Enemies, who are chiefly the *Tartars*, and ſometimes the *Perſians*; they have frequently Civil Wars amongſt themſelves upon the death of their Prince, if he leaves more Sons than one behind him; for he who laſt ruled, and was Father of this preſent *Mogul*, made his way to the Empire by the death of eleven of his Brethren, he himſelf being the youngeſt when he dyed, which is not long ſince; three of his ſons ſurvived him, who all immediately raiſed great Armies either to gain the Empire, or loſe their lives in general.

The two youngeſt having aſſembled all their well-willers and friends, with conſiderable Armies approached one another, a River now only parting them.

The eldeſt of the two diſpatched a Meſſenger to his Brother, to tell him that he was very well ſatisfied in his taking Armes, and ſince he was in ſuch readineſs, if he pleaſed he would joyn forces with him, and aſſault their elder Brother,

who being vanquiſht they would divide the Government. The youngeſt Brother willingly aſſenting to theſe propoſitions, came over to him, but no ſooner was he in his power, but he cauſed both his eyes to be put out, (thereby diſenabling him from the Government) and ſoon gaining the Captains of his Brothers Army to his party, he joyned Forces, and cauſing his blind Brother to be carried with him, advanced to meet and oppoſe his elder Brother; in ſhort time they met, and ſought each other with various ſucceſs, but in fine he conquered his Brother, and depriving him of life, as the other of ſight, he now remains ſole Monarch of this large Empire.

The old *Mogul* died infinitely rich, for he left eight *Tancks* of coyned Money, each *Tanck* eſteemed to hold ten millions of Rupees; and indeed it is no great marvel, for he hath ſome of his Subjects, eſpecially the *Banian* Merchants, that are very rich, all whoſe treaſure he will command at his own will; there is one *Banian* whoſe name is *Vergore*, who was the chiefeſt Merchant of his Tribe, and hath moſt of the Stocks of his fellows in his hand; to him the *Great Mogul* ſent for money, to which meſſage he ſent this anſwer, That he would preſently furniſh his Highneſs with a hundred Carts loaden with ready money. The *Mogul* hearing this, ordered him to keep it till he ſent again, or had further occaſion. The *Engliſh* have great priviledges, for they pay leſs Duties and Cuſtomes than the Natives, for the *Banian* Merchants will ſometimes hire an *Engliſh* man to go to Sea with them in their Juncks, which are great Barks, not to do any ſervice in the voyage,

but only to own the Goods, that they may ſave ſeveral Taxes and Duties that elſe muſt be paid, as Anchorage and Moorage. I one time was asked by a *Banian* of my acquaintance, whether I would go to Sea with him, and he would give me a conſiderable recompence: he told me that I ſhould only wear my hat, eat my victuals, and when we came to our Port own the Goods; being deſirous of ſeeing faſhions I conſented, and our Junck being loaden, we ſet ſail and departed: but never was I accompanied with ſuch Sailers, for the Junck (which is much like a cloſe Lighter) was deeply loaded with Callicoes, it carried above 1000 Tun: the wind being fair, all the tackling was nailed down and faſtned, ſo that when we had been four dayes at Sea, the wind contrary to cuſtome changed: but though it began to be tempeſtuous, yet all our men being then at dinner, there was none would leave their eating to handle the ſails, or alter the tackling; dinner being ended, I perſwaded them with much adoe to go to work, but it was ſome hours ere they had looſned their tackling, ſo as to lower their ſails, and by that time we were driven out of knowledge; the winds there are uſually ſo conſtant, that they never make proviſion to handle their ſails, and alter them, but commonly as they fix them at their ſetting out, ſo they continue till they come to their Port, where inſtead of an Anchor they carry a very great ſtone, faſtned by an iron ring to their Cable, which they let down while they ſtay, but take up when they go away; and then they alter their ſails, fitting them to the wind to bring

them back; they continue in that manner to the end of the Voyage.

But now it ſalling out otherwiſe, great was their trouble, not knowing how to behave themſelves: and although there was forty men on board, and they all well enough acquainted with Navigation in thoſe parts, yet I that was but of one years ſtanding was their beſt inſtructor, or elſe we had been loſt and periſhed; moſt of our ſails being now taken down, and the wind ceaſing, we by the next day came into our knowledge, but met with another misfortune, which was like to prove worſe than the former, for we diſcovered a Junck, though nothing near ſo big as ours, yet better man'd, and was indeed a *Malabar* Man of War, and our profeſſed Enemy, who are uſed to inſeſt thoſe Seas with their Pyracies; our Seamen being ſenſible of the deſperateneſs of our condition, were greatly diſmayed, but I (who was formerly uſed to be dead-hearted enough) did now become valorous, and encouraged them by words and actions, for conſidering the badneſs of my own condition, being likely not only to loſe what Eſtate I had lately gathered, but at leaſt wiſe my liberty, and it may be my life, (for many of theſe *Malabars* do kill and ſeed on their Priſoners) theſe conſiderations I ſay poſſeſſed me with ſo much courage, that I was reſolved to try my utmoſt power to defend my ſelf from my Enemies; we were by chance accompanied by ten *Moors* called *Raſhpoots*, who being alwayes brought up in Wars, never go unarmed; theſe perſons being more courageous than the reſt, by my example, put themſelves into a poſture of defence, and the other Seamen had Swords and

other weapons put into their hands, to keep the Enemy from boarding us: we had eight great Guns in our Junck, which were carried more for ornament than uſe, for they knew not how to diſcharge them againſt an Enemy to advantage, (they being as well as their tackling and ſails, fixed to one place) only ſerved to be ſhot off in triumph, and make a noiſe, but would not be well levelled to carry a Bullet to do execution. I ſeeing this inconvenience, took ſuch order therein that the Guns were placed ſo as to dammage our Enemy, who now approaching us, came cloſe up towards us, but he found a hotter entertainment than he expected, for we killed ſeveral of his men with our firſt broad-ſide; the only weapons our Enemies had were great ſtones, which they threw at us in abundance; but we having again charged our great Guns, and all the ſmall ones we had aboard, gave them ſuch a peal as was the funeral knel to many of them; by this time they were diſcouraged, and our men ſeeing the good ſucceſs we had came all in ſight and every one taking a great ſtone which had been thrown to us by the Enemy, gave them ſuch an onſet with the ſtones, as now made them think of giving over their enterprize, which we compelled them to do, ſo ſoon as we had given them another broad ſide, and once more diſcharged all our ſmall guns: this gave them ſo general a blow that they Vered about and left us to proſecute our Voyage. Our Enemies being gone, I called all our men together to ſee what damage we had ſuſtained, and upon enquiry found that we had not loſt a man: but about half a dozen broken

heads and faces was all the harm we had received.

I was generally applauded for my courage, and the chief owner of the Goods not only rendred me infinite thanks, but promiſed me a great reward, which was juſtly paid me at the end of our voyage: I told them that I much wondred at the manner of our Enemies fight, but I received this anſwer, that they ſeldome uſed any other weapons than ſtones, which they carried in great plenty, truſting to them and their great numbers: for the Bark that ſet upon us had above a hundred men in her, and would have certainly taken us, had I not made ſo good a fight with our Guns, which was a thing unuſual for them to meet with, not ſuſpecting that we could make any uſe of them, otherwiſe then to ſhoot upright as was uſual, but they found the contrary to to their coſt: for I ſuppoſe we had the good fortune to kill ſeveral of them, which ſo diſheartned them, that they left us as I told you; and thus we meeting with no more obſtruction, in two moneths time finiſhed our voyage, and returned home, where I received 500 Rupees as a recompence for my good ſervice.

I was joyfully received at home by my Wife, and acquired a very good eſteem of all by this my valourous exploit, and had many advantageous offers to go again on the ſame account; but I valuing my pleaſure more than profit, which was hazardous, declined the propoſitions, and now reſted my ſelf at home, only making ſome excurſions to viſit the beſt of my friends, who failed not to welcome me, being the handſomeſt Wo-

men, to whom I made my ſelf welcome. Sometimes I travelled to the adjacent Towns, where I viſited the pleaſant Gardens, and other times I went further to the Cities, which being well built with Brick, had pleaſant Platforms or Turrets on the top; many of the Cities were walled, and fortifyed with Caſtles for their defence: I ſeldome went without a couple of attendants, which are called *Puiſns*, who were my daily ſervants; theſe were a ſort of *Banians* who ſerved me for four ſhillings a moneth a piece, and out of that found themſelves diet, unleſs they travelled far from home, and then I allowed each of them but three half pence a piece *per* day to buy them victuals and drink, which was only *Cutkeree Butter*, *Toddee*, with which they were very well ſatisfied; neither indeed doth the *Conſul* give much more to his Servitors, for his chief *Puiſn* hath but twelve ſhillings *per* moneth, and out of that he keeps a horſe and a ſervant to attend him. They are very diligent and faithful in what they are intruſted with, but ſo ſoon as they perceive a New Moon, they tell their Maſter of it, that they may pay them their wages.

Having now ſatisfied my curioſity in theſe travels, and being returned home, I began to conſider with my ſelf my fore-paſſed life: then it was I did run over theſe ſeveral accidents that had formerly befallen me.

As firſt, how I committed Rogueries when but a Boy, and ran away from my Mother, (of whom I had never ſince ſo much as heard or enquired) I had ſome reflections thereupon, and what my Mother might Judge was become of

me: Then did I call to mind the rogueries I committed, when among the Gypſies and Beggars, and how with them I firſt tryed and taſted the pleaſure of a Female companion, from that my apprentiſhip, and the ſeveral adventures I had, and the pleaſant nights lodgings, I enjoyed not only with the Maid, but the Miſtreſs: how after the Maid, whom I had gotten with Child, was delivered, I diſpatcht her and child to *Virginia*, and ſoon after by mine and my Miſtreſſes extravagancies ſent my Maſter firſt to Priſon, and ſo out of the world, my Miſtreſs her ſelf not long ſurviving him: being then a freeman, I married, but was juſtly enough fitted for my diſloyalty by my wives incontinency, which with my own prodigality ſoon conſumed me, enforced me to leave *England* for *Ireland*, which being my firſt great remove, I ſeriouſly reflected on not knowing where I ſhould end my dayes, I being now far diſtant from the place of my Nativity; but I bethinking my ſelf that my only livelyhood depended there in my viril ſtrength, not that I was expoſed to carry burthens, or labour in the day time, but in the night, in Venerial combats, where I received equal pleaſure: and indeed I having run through the whole courſe of my life, found, that by the favourable and good opinion of women (which was not undeſerved) I had not only preſerved my ſelf, but many times raiſed my ſelf a ſufficient fortune: as I had lately done by marrying with my *Mooriſh* Wife, in which preſent condition I concluded my ſelf much better than when I was in *Ireland* tyed to my old woman, who only paid me and gave me money ac-

cording to the ſervice I did her, and was then again old and peeviſh, and above all things very jealous; whereas now I was my own pay-maſter, and though my bed-fellow was not fair, yet ſhe was young and pleaſant, and ſo far from jealouſie, that ſhe her ſelf ſometimes would procure me a young girl, the faireſt in the country to lye with me, and ſhe alſo lying by me, and taking much pleaſure therein.

Then did I proceed in the thoughts of my former life, and conſidered the many dangers I underwent, all the time I followed my padding employment, and though I then uſually wore money enough in my Pocket, and ſometimes met with ſome female adventures, as the Farmers Daughter, the Poetick Widdow, and my Female Robbers, and others in whoſe converſe I took much pleaſure, yet I was in all theſe pleaſures ſtill accompanied with fear of being ſnapt, as indeed I was at laſt and likely to be trus't up: but that my penitence wrought ſo upon my friends as to procure my ſentence of death, to be altered into that of baniſhment: which had through many miſeries and croſs adventures brought me hither, where I received the full enjoyment of all things: this conſideration took me up much time, and poſſeſſed me with ſome virtuous thoughts, believing that I had not been preſerved and reſerved from ſo many hazards but for ſome good end; and now I had a fair opportunity of declining Vice, and living vertuouſly, I not being likely to be expoſed to any ſuch Roguiſh ſhifts or courſes as formerly, theſe thoughts of virtue made way for thoſe of Religion, and now it was that I

ſeriouſly conſidered of that Word in general, and being (though little practiſed in) yet well enough acquainted with the Chriſtian Religion, I wondered at the abſurdity of the Religion of other Nations, eſpecially of the Country wherein I now lived; and having been curious in the enquiry of the grounds thereof, I had received a good account, though little ſatisfaction; but ſince it is a Novelty, and may well enough ſuit with the following diſcourſe, which will conſiſt of ſeveral and variety of Knaveries and Cheatings, whereof I ſuppoſe this of this Countries Religion may very well bear a part: I ſhall give you a ſhort account thereof in this following chapter.

CHAP. II.

The Original Religion and Worſhip of the Banians *and* Perſees, *with all their Caſtes and Tribes.*

THis large part of the World which is governed by the *Great Mogul*, is inhabited by theſe three ſort of People, *Banians*, *Moor-men* or *Raſhpoots*, and *Perſees*; the ſeveral Religions or Worſhips of the firſt and laſt, *viz.* the *Banians* and *Perſees*, I ſhall here give you an account of; but for the *Moors* or *Raſhpoots*, they have little eſteem for any Religion

in particular, and being for the moſt part Souldiers, are of the *Great Moguls* Religion, which is partly *Mahometan*, I ſhall therefore begin with the *Banians*, who believe in one God, and that he created the World out of nothing, and that after this manner; firſt he having the four Elements of Air, Earth, Fire, and Water for a ground-work, by ſome great Cane or ſuch like inſtrument, blew upon the waters, which aroſe into a bubble of a round form like an Egg, which ſpreading itſelf made the Firmament ſo clear and tranſparent, which now compaſſeth the World about; after this there remaining true liquid ſubſtance in the Earth, God made of both theſe together a thing round like a Ball, which is called the lower World; the more ſolid part became Earth, the liquid Sea, both which making one Globe, he by a great noiſe or huming found placed them in the midſt of the Firmament, there he created the Sun and Moon to diſtinguiſh times and ſeaſons, and the four Elements which were before mixed, were now ſeparated and aſſigned to their ſeveral places, and diſcharged their ſeveral offices; the Air filled up the empty parts, the Fire nouriſhed with heat, the Earth and Sea brought forth their living creatures, and then was the World created; and as it had its beginning from four Elements, ſo it was meaſured by four points, *Eaſt*, *Weſt*, *North* and *South*, and was to be continued for four Ages, to be peopled by four *Caſts* or ſorts of men, who were to be married by four ſorts of women appointed for them. The World being made, Man was likewiſe made out of the Earth, God putting him into life, and he worſhipping his Creator; Woman was likewiſe made

and given to him as a companion; the firſt mans name was *Pourous*, and the womans name was *Parcoutee*, and they lived together as man and wife, feeding on the fruits of the earth, not deſtroying any living Creature.

Theſe two had four ſons called *Brammon*, *Cuttery*, *Shuddery*, and *Wyſe*, who were of different and diſtinct nature from each other, for *Brammon* was of an earthly conſtitution, and therefore Melancholly; *Cuttery* fiery, and therefore Martial; *Shuddery* flegmatick, and therefore Peaceable: *Wyſe* airey, and therefore full of contrivances and inventions. *Brammon* being melancholly and ingenious, God gave him knowledge, and appointed him to impart his Laws, and therefore gave him a Book containing the form of Divine Worſhip and Religion; *Cuttery* being Martial, had power to govern Kingdoms, and therefore had a Sword given him; *Shuddery* being mild and converſable, it was thought fit that he ſhould be a Merchant and Traffick, and therefore had a pair of Ballances and a bag of Weights hung at his girdle; and *Wyſe* being airey, was appointed for a Mechanick or Handicrafts man, and therefore had a bag of ſeveral ſorts of tools.

Theſe were the firſt men, and theſe their qualities, (according to the *Banian* tradition) that peopled the Earth; *Pourous* and *Parcoutee* had no daughters, becauſe the ſons ſhould go elſewhere to find them wives, which were made for them, and placed at the four winds; the four ſons being grown up to mans age, were commanded to travel; And,

Firſt, *Brammon* with his Book in his hand took his

journey towards the riſing of the Sun in the Eaſt; for the place where they were born, and their Parents created, was in the Middle or Navel of the world, the Sun at Noon-day caſting no ſhadow. *Brammon* taking his journey, as is ſaid, towards the Eaſt, arrived at a goodly Mountain, before which was a Valley, through which there paſſed a Brook; in the deſcent of which there appeared a Woman a drinking. This Woman was of black hair, yellow Complexion, of an indifferent ſize, and a modeſt aſpect, and indeed in every thing made, as if made for her beholder; who being naked, and ſeeing her to be ſo, was more baſhful than the Woman, who firſt brake ſilence, by queſtioning the cauſe of his coming thither.

Brammon hearing her ſpake, and that in his own Language, thus reply'd, *That the great God, who made all things had ſent him thither*: The Woman ſeeing his Book, asked the uſe of it; whereupon he opening it, ſhewed her the Contents thereof; and after ſome other diſcourſe ſhe confented to be married to him, according to the form prefcribed in that book; which being done, they lay together, and had many children, who peopled the Eaſt part of the world: this Womans name was *Savatree.*

Cuttery the 2d. Brother, was ſent upon the ſame account to the Weſt part of the world, and taking his ſword in his hand, he advanced on his journey; but not meeting with any adventure or occaſion to make uſe thereof, he was much troubled; deſiring above all things, that he might meet with ſome people whereon he might exercife his courage: thus impatiently did he proceed on his journey, till

he arrived near a high Mountain, where he might behold a Perſonage who was walking with a Martial pace, and coming nearer, found to be a Woman armed with a weapon call'd a Chuckery: They were no ſooner met, but they encountred, and ſet upon one another; but though he expected a ſudden conqueſt, yet was he deceived therein, for his adverſary held him in play all that day, till night parted them. The next day alſo they wholly ſpent in fight; he gained no advantage over his female enemy, only at the cloze of the day, he had the fortune to cut her weapon in two; but the night coming on, ſhe eſcaped from him, without any further damage.

The next day ſhe was provided with Bow and Arrows, and then had a great advantage over him, becauſe ſhe could wound him at a diſtance, and he could not hurt her without a cloſe fight; he being ſenſible of this odds, clozed with her, and by main ſtrength threw her down, holding her by the hair of the head; when having a perfect view of her beauties, inſtead of an enemy, he became a lover of this beautiful object; and that he might gain her affections, he threw by his weapons, and applyed himſelf to her in fair ſpeeches, to which ſhe was attentive; and he at length became ſo prevalent, that they at preſent plighted troths to one another, and of enemies, not only at that inſtant became friends; but in ſhort time after, living together, and Nature dictating to them what muſt be done for the procreation of their like, they taſted the fruit of Loves garden, and had many children, who peopled the Weſt part of the World; this Womans name was *Toddicaſtree.*

Chuddery the 3d. Son, who was the Merchant-man, was ſent to the North with his ballance and weights, and he after much travel happened on a place where he found Pearls, and a Rock or Mine of Diamonds; and believing them (by reaſon of their great luſter in the dark) of ſome extraordinary value, took ſome of them with him, and ſpecial notice of the place, that he might find it again; and ſo proceeding on his journey, came to the place where was the Woman that was to be his Wife, who was wandring by the ſide of a Wood; ſhe, ſeeing him, became fearful; but he coming to her, and giving her good words, won upon her to ſtay and receive him into her company; and after an account of his journey, which ſhe concluded was purpoſely deſigned to her, becauſe they underſtood one anothers ſpeech, he beſtowed ſome of his Pearls and Diamonds upon her; in time they proving the comforts of the conjoyned ſtate, had ſeveral childaen, who peopled the North part of the World, and became Merchant-men: he afterwards travelling with them, ſhewed them the rock of Diamonds; this Womans name was *Viſagundah.*

Wyſe, the 4th. and youngeſt of the Brethren, went alſo to the South parts of the World, and carried his tools with him, whereby he was able to build a houſe, or perform any other piece of work needful for the uſe of man; he was forced to paſs over ſeven Seas, at each place making a Veſſel, and leaving it behind him: the laſt Sea was called *Paſhurbatee*, and brought him to a Land called *Derpe*, where he built him a houſe to live in, which he did with much content, till the

Woman appointed ſor him came thither to behold the ſame: She was very amiable and white, and her hair was powdred with *Saunders* and other *Odours*: She firſt ſpake to him, demanding *how he came thither*; He anſwered her, *that the Almighty had ſent him, and he had taken great pains by coming over ſeven Seas to wait on her*: She was diſpleaſed with his diſcourſe and houſe, telling him *that ſhe needed him not;* and notwithſtanding all his perſwaſions, left him: he afterwards met her walking in the Woods; but could not prevail with her to continue with him; but left him much troubled. After this, he being in a profound melancholy, walking abroad, came to a parcel of trees, under which he placed himſelf, and there prayed to his Creator, *that he might not loſe his labour, in coming ſo far to find a Woman that would not converſe with him*: To this prayer he had anſwer, *that his requeſt ſhould be granted, on condition, that for the future he would erect Images, and adore, and worſhip them under green trees:* To this he conſented, and at the next meeting he gained the good will of this Woman who was named *Jejunogundah*, ſo that ſhe became his wife, by whom he had ſeveral children that peopled the South.

Theſe Four Brethren being thus diſperſed at the 4 ſeveral parts of the earth, and having peopled the ſame, were all deſirous of returning to their own Country from whence they came, to ſee their Father and Mother, and recount their ſeveral adventures to them, and to that end, leaving their children behind, they and their wives travelled ſo

long, till they came to the place; where they were firſt joyfully received of their Parents; and then of each other; there they likewiſe had ſeveral other children, begetting ſeveral generations, that all the world might be inſtructed in their ſeveral qualities, by *Brauuou* in matters of Religion, by *Cuttery* in Rule and Governments, by *Shuddery* in Traffick and Merchandize, and by *Wyſe* in matters of Handicrafts; of which four Caſts the world conſiſteth, every one of them living in his ſeveral quality, keeping his tribe free from confuſion or interfeering; and thus the world was peopled: but in time, multitude begat difference, and diſorder, and miſchief, and every perſon diſagreed with the other, every one producing new and various differences, as well in matters of Religion and Worſhip, as in all other affairs, when the Almighty for the wickedneſs of mankind ſent a flood which came and deſtroyed all the Creatures of the earth; and this according to the tradition of the *Bauians*, was the firſt Age of the world.

This world of Creatures being deſtroyed, others were made in this manner: The Almighty firſt made out of the earth theſe three Creatures, *Breman*, *Viſtuey* and *Ruddery*, and gave great power to them; to *Bremau* he gave the power of making Creatures, becauſe ſay the *Bauians*, as great perſons do not their work but by Deputies, ſo neither was it fit that God ſhould be ſervile to his Creatures, but give to them their being by his Inſtruments. To the ſecond, which was *Viſtney*, he gave charge to preſerve the Creatures: But to the third, which was *Ruddery*, he gave power to deſtroy them, becauſe he knew they would be

wicked, and deſerve Judgments. *Breman* was to be taken up to Heaven in concluſion of the ſecond age. *Viſtney* was to live as long again as *Breman*, and *Ruddery* was to continue three times as long, and then he ſhould deſtroy all the world, which ſhould be the great day of Judgement.

Breman according to the power given him, produced man and Woman out of his own bowels, who being inſtructed by him gave worſhip to God, and reverence to him: the man was by him named *Mamaw*, and the Woman *Ceterrupa*; they were ſent to the *Eaſt*, and there they had three ſons and three daughters, who were ſent ſeverally to the *Weſt*, *North* and *South*, which were peopled by them: thus man being made by *Breman*, *Viſtney* provided things neceſſary for them, and *Ruddery* diſperſed afflictions, ſickneſſes and death, as men did deſerve them.

It was now neceſſary ſay the *Banians*, that the Law ſhould be given, according to which they ſhould live; and therefore *Breman* being called up into a Mountain, the Almighty gave him out of a cloud a book, which the *Banians* call the *Shaſter*, wherein was written their Lawes; this book conſiſted of three Tracts.

The firſt, whereof contained their Moral Law, and an Explication or Appropriation of the precepts to every ſeveral Tribe and Caſt.

The ſecond, was their Ceremonial Law.

The third, diſtinguiſhed them into Caſts or Tribes, with peculiar obſervations for each Caſt and Tribe.

The firſt Tract of the Moral Law contained eight commandements.

1. That they ſhould kill no living Creature, becauſe like man it had a ſoul.

2. That they ſhould make a Covenant with their five ſenſes: the Eyes not to ſee evil things, the Ears not to hear evil things, the Tongue not to ſpeak evil, the Pallat not to taſte, as wine or fleſh, the hands not to touch any thing defiled.

3. That they ſhould duly obſerve the times of devotion in waſhing, worſhip, *&c.*

4. That they ſhould not tell falſe tales to deceive.

5. That they ſhould be charitable to the poor.

6. That they ſhould not oppreſs their poor brethren.

7. That they ſhould celebrate certain Feſtivals, not pampering the body, but faſting and watching, to be fitter for devotion.

8. That they ſhould not ſteal, though never ſo little.

Theſe eight are beſtowed among the four Tribes or Caſts, to each two Commandements: to the *Brammanes*, which are the Prieſts, the firſt and ſecond, as being ſtricteſt in Religion. To *Shuddery* they appropriate the third and fourth, as moſt proper to them. To *Cuttery* the fifth, and ſixth, and to *Wyſe*, the ſeventh and eighth: they are all enjoyned to keep all the Commandements, but more particularly thoſe that are appropriated to their ſeveral Caſts.

The ſecond Tract of the Book delivered to *Breman*, comprized certain ceremonial injunctions, which are theſe.

Firſt, waſhing their bodies in rivers, in memory of the deluge, in which they uſe this ceremony:

firſt, they beſmear their bodies in the mud of the River, as an emblem of mans filthyneſs; and then coming into the water and turning their faces towards the Sun, the *Bramman* prayes, that as the body which is foul as the mud of the River which is cleanſed by water, ſo that his ſin may be in like manner cleanſed; and then the party plunging himſelf three times in the River, and ſhaking in his hand ſome grains of Rice as an offering on the water: he receiveth abſolution for his ſins paſt, and is diſmiſſed.

2. The ceremony of anointing the fore head with red painting, as a peculiar mark which they often renew.

3. They are enjoyned to tender certain prayers and offerings under green trees, the original of which cuſtom they derive from *Wyſe*, to whom they ſay God appeared in a Viſion under a tree; the tree particularly appropriated for this worſhip, is called *Ficu Indica*, as, *vide* Sr. W. *Rawleigh*, for which tree they have a very great eſteem.

4. They are enjoyned prayers in their Temples, where they offer to Images with ringing and loud tinckling of bells and ſuch like impertinent ſervices.

5. They are enjoyned Pilgrimage to rivers remote, as *Ganges*, where they throw in, as offerings, Jewels and Treaſure of great value.

6. They uſe Invocation of Saints, and for all their affairs they have ſeveral Saints they invoke for aſſiſtance.

7. Their law binds them to give worſhip to God, upon ſight of any of his Creatures firſt ſeen after Sun riſe, eſpecially to the Sun and Moon,

which they call the two eyes of God, as alſo to ſome Beaſts.

8. In baptizing children, there is difference in the Caſts, for the *Brammanes* are extraordinary: the reſt of the children are only waſht in water, with a ſhort prayer, that God would write good things in the front of the child, all preſent ſaying *Amen.* They name the child, putting a red oyntment on the midſt of his forehead, and the ceremony is done. But the children of the Caſt of the *Brammanes* are not only waſhed with water, but anoynted with oyl with theſe words: *Oh Lord, we preſent unto thee this child, born of a holy Tribe, anointed with oyl, and cleanſed with water*; unto which they add other ceremonies, then they enquire the exact time of the childs birth, and calculate his Nativity, which they keep by them and give them at the day of their marriage.

9, As for their marriages, their time is different from other Nations, for they marry at 7 years of age, they are uſually contracted by their Parents; which being agreed on, they ſend preſents, and uſe many triumphant perambulations about the town for two dayes; and then at the going down of the Sun they uſe this ceremony. A fire is made and interpoſed between the young couple, to intimate the ardency of their affections; then there is a ſilken ſtring that encloſes both their bodies, to witneſs the inſolveable bond of wedlock; after this bond, there is a cloth interpoſed betwixt them, a cuſtom taken from the meeting of *Brammon* and *Savatre*, who covered themſelves till the words of matrimony were uttered, ſo the *Brammanes* pronouncing certain words,

enjoyning the man to provide for the Woman, and her to loyalty, and pronouncing the bleſſing of a fruitful iſſue, the ſpeech is concluded; the cloth interpoſed is taken away; the bond which ingirted them, unlooſed; full freedom is given them to communicate with one another; they give no dowry, only the Jewels worn on the Bridal day; none come to the feaſt, but thoſe of the ſame Tribe or Caſt: no Woman is admitted to ſecond marriage, except the Tribe of *Wyſe*, which are the handicrafts; men in all Tribes may marry twice except the *Bramanes*, every Tribe marries in their own Caſts, and the Tribe of the *Wyſe* not only marry in their own Tribe, but in their own trade: as a Barber or Smiths ſon, muſt marry a Barber or Smiths daughter of the ſame Tribe.

10. Which is the laſt, is the ceremony of their burials; when any is ſick to death, they enjoyn him to utter *Narrane*, which is one of the names of God, importing mercy to ſinners: they pour fair water into his hand, praying to *Kiſtnetuppon*, the God of the water, to preſent him pure to God; he being dead, his body is waſhed, and after buried in this manner. They carry the body to a rivers ſide and being ſet down, the *Brammane* uttereth theſe words. *Oh earth! we commend unto thee this our brother, whilſt he lived thou hadſt an intereſt in him, of the earth he was made, by the bleſſing of the earth he was fed, and therefore now he is dead, we ſurrender him to thee:* after this putting combuſtible matter to the body, lighted by the help of ſweet oyl, the *Brammane* ſaith, *Oh fire, whilſt he lived thou hadſt a claim in him, by whoſe natural heat he ſubſiſted, we return there-*

fore his body to thee that thou ſhouldſt purge it. Then the ſon of the deceaſed ſets two pots, one with water, and the other with milk on the ground; the pot with milk on the top of the other, and with a ſtone breaks the pot with water, whereby the water and milk are both ſpoiled; upon which account the ſon thus moralizeth, That as the ſtone makes the veſſels yield, ſo did ſickneſs ruin his Fathers body, which is then burnt to aſhes, which are thrown into the air, the *Brammane* uttering theſe words, *Oh air, whilſt he lived by thee he breathed, and now having breathed his laſt, we yield him to thee.* The aſhes falling on the water, the *Brammane* faith, *Oh water, whilſt he lived, thy moyſture did ſuſtain him, and now his body is diſperſed, take thy part in him.* This being done, the *Brammane* reads (to the Son or neareſt of kin to the deceaſed) the Law of mourners; *That for ten days he muſt eat no Beetle, nor oyl his head, nor put on clean clothes; but once a month make a Feaſt, and viſit the River whoſe water drank up his Fathers aſhes.* Beſides this, there was a Cuſtom which is brought into a Law, for the Wives of the deceaſed to accompany their Husbands in death, by burning themſelves with his body; and this is ſtill uſed among perſons of greateſt worth, the Women voluntarily expoſing their bodies to the flames. And this is the ſum of the ſecond Tract of the Book delivered to *Breman.*

The third Tract conſiſteth of their being diſtinguiſhed into Caſts and Tribes, with peculiar obſervations for each. The *Brammanes* being firſt, have their name either of *Brammon*, who was the firſt of that Tribe; or elſe from *Breman*, who

was the firſt of the ſecond Age, to whom the Law was delivered, of which there are two ſorts, the common, and the more ſpecial; the common *Brammane* hath eighty two Caſts or Tribes; which are diſtinguiſhed by the names of the places of their firſt habitations. Theſe diſcharge the Miniſterial function, in praying and reading their Law to the People, in which they uſe a kind of minical fantaſtical geſture, and a ſinging tone. They are firſt received into that Order at ſeven years of age, uſing the ceremony of waſhing and ſhaving their heads, only leaving one lock; they are bound to a Pythagorean ſilence, and prohibited haulking, ſpitting, or coughing, wearing about their loyns a girdle of an Antilop's skin, and another thong of the ſame about their neck, deſcending under the left arm: At fourteen years of age they are admitted to be *Brammanes*, exchanging thoſe leather thongs for four ſealing threads that come over the right ſhoulder, and under the right arm, which they ſleep withal, in honour of God and the three perſons; they are enjoyned to keep all things in the *Brammanes* Law.

The more ſpecial ſort of *Brammanes* are of the Caſt of the *Shudderys* or *Merchant-man*, who for devotion take this condition; He wears a wollen garment of white, reaching down to the middle of the thigh, the reſt is naked: his head is alwayes uncovered; they do not ſhave, but pluck off all the hair from their heads and beards, leaving only one lock.

There are ſeveral Caſts of theſe, that live more ſtrictly than the reſt; for theſe never Marry, are very

moderate in their Diet, and drink nothing but water boyled, that ſo the vapour, which they ſuppoſe to be life, may go out; they ſweep away and diſperſe their dung, leſt it ſhould generate worms that may have life, and be deſtroyed, they keep an Hoſpital of lame and maimed flying fowl, which they redeem with a price; they have all things common, but place no faith in outward waſhings, but rather imbrace a careleſs and ſordid naſtineſs.

The ſecond Tribe or Caſt was *Cutteryes*, who had their name from *Cuttery*, the ſecond ſon of *Ponrous*, who having Dominion and Rule committed to him; therefore all Souldiers and Kings are ſaid to be of his Tribe.

That particular of *Bremans* Book that concerned this Caſt, contained certain precepts of Government and Policy, which being of common import, I choſe to omit, and ſhall only tell you, that in their flouriſhing eſtate they were the ancient Kings of *India*, eſpecially of that part that is called *Guzzarat*, and were called by the name of *Racabs*, which ſignifies a King; they are ſaid to have thirty ſix Tribes, and none were admitted to rule or govern but out of theſe Tribes. But in time theſe *Racabs* were moſt of them put from the Government, and deſtroyed by the *Mahometans*, who oppreſſed them; ſome of them ſtill remain, and are called *Raſhpootes*, which I have before named; ſome are as yet unconquered, and ſometimes fight with and againſt the great *Mogul*.

The third Son of *Ponrous* being called *Shuddery*, and Merchandizing being appointed him, all Merchants therefore are comprized under this

Name. The particular of *Bremans* Book that concerned this Caſt, was a Seminary of Religious advertizement, enjoyning them to truth in their words and dealings. Theſe are they that are moſt properly called *Banians*, which name ſignifies a *harmleſs People*, that will not endure to ſee a fly, or worm, or any living thing to be injured, and being themſelves ſtrucken, bear it patiently without reſiſtance; they are equal in number of their Caſts to the *Brammanes*, and being like to them, do more ſtrictly follow their injunctions. Their form and contract in buying and ſelling is ſomething notable; for the Broaker that beateth the price with him that ſelleth, looſeth his *Pamerin* that his ſolded about his waſt, and ſpreading it upon his knee, with hands folded underneath, by their fingers ends the price of pounds, ſhillings or pence, is fixed, as the Chapman is intended to give: The ſeller in like manner intimateth how much he purpoſeth to have; which ſilent compoſition their Law enjoyneth.

Laſtly, as the Son of *Ponrous* was called *Wyſe*, and was Maſter of Merchants or Handicrafts, ſo all Handicrafts are of that Tribe. The directions that were in *Breman's* Book for theſe, were touching their behaviours in their Callings: The name *Wyſe* ſignifies one that one is *ſervile* or *inſtrumentary*; theſe People are now commonly called *Gentiles*, which are of two ſorts; firſt, the purer *Gentile*, ſuch as diet themſelves as the *Banians*, not eating fleſh, fiſh or wine; and the impure eat of all ſorts, and are commonly Husbandmen, and uſually called *Coulees*. Thoſe of the purer ſort have thirty ſix Caſts, according to the number of the Trades practiſed among them; in which, they

make as few inſtruments ſerve for the effecting of divers works, as may be; and whatever they do, is contrary to the Chriſtian form of working, for the moſt part. This is the ſubſtance of the the third Tract of the Book delivered to *Breman*, concerning the manner of the four Tribes.

This Book was by *Breman* communicated to the *Brammanes* to be publiſhed to the People, who did give abſolute obedience to theſe injunctions; but in time, fraud, violence and all manner of wickednefs being committed, God grew angry, and acquainted *Breman* that he would deſtroy the world: who acquainted the People herewith, but to little purpoſe, for ſoon after they fell to their wickednefs, and God took *Breman* up into his boſome who had interceeded for man-kind; then alſo *Viſtney* (whoſe nature and Office it was to preſerve the People) did interceed, but God would not be pacifyed, but gave charge to *Ruddery* (whoſe Office it was to deſtroy) to cauſe the bowels of the earth to ſend out a wind to ſweep the Nations as the duſt from the face of the earth: this command was accordingly executed, and all people were deſtroyed ſaving a few that God permitted *Viſtney* to cover with the skirts of his preſervation, reſerved to propagate man-kind in the third age, and ſo this Age concluded.

The wickednefs and ill government of the Kings and Rulers, being the chief cauſe of deſtroying the laſt age: therefore all thoſe of *Cutteries* Tribe were all deſtroyed. Now becauſe it was neceſſary that there ſhould be ſome of that Caſt as well as others, wherefore God raiſed that Tribe again out of the Caſt of the *Bramanes*:

the name of him who renewed and raiſed this Tribe was called *Ram*, who was a good King and lived pioufly; but his fucceffors did not fo, but committed fo much wickednefsthat God again deftroyed the world, by the opening of the earth, which ſwallowed up all mankind, but a few of the four Tribes who were left to new-people the world again, and this was the concluſion of the third Age.

At the beginning of the fourth Age, there was one *Kiſtney*, a famous Ruler, and pious King, who wonderfully promoted Religion. *Viſtney* was now taken up into Heaven, there being no further need of his preſervation; for when this Age is concluded, there ſhall be a full end of all things. The *Brammanes* fuppofe this Age ſhall be longer then any of the reft, in the end whereof *Ruddery* ſhall be taken up into Heaven: thefe four ages they call by thefe four names, *Curtain*, *Duauper*, *Tetrajoo* and *Kotee;* they hold the manner of thefe laſt judgements ſhall be by fire, when all ſhall be deftroyed; and fo the four Ages of the world ſhall be deftroyed by the four Elements. And then ſhall *Ruddery* carry up the fouls of all people to Heaven with him, to reft in Gods bofome, but the bodyes ſhall all periſh: fo that they believe not the refurrection; for they fay Heaven being a place that is pure, they hold it cannot be capable of fuch grofs fubſtances.

This is the fum of the *Banians* Religion, wherein you find much of fancy and conceit as to make it be fo antient, and the number four to be ufed fo often, as you have heard the meaning of the three creatures,

I fuppofe alludes to the Trinity; but inftead of a confirmation and proof of a Trinity, they would make a Quaternity thereof, in the name; I fuppofe, they (as well as other Nations who differ from us in Religion) had read over our Bible, and fuppofing that but fictions, were refolved to make a Law of their own, to be fomewhat like that of ours; which how they have done you have already heard: I fhall now likewife give you a brief account of the Religion ufed by the *Perfees*, and fo put an end to this Chapter.

Thefe *Perfees* are a People defcended from the antient *Perfians*, who lived in much fplendor, but warrs coming among them, they were diffipated, and the *Mahometans* who invaded them, compelled feveral to leave their antient Religion for that of the *Mahometan*: which they refufing, expofed themfelves to a voluntary banifhment, and therefore carried what of their fubftance they could with them: they fought for a new place of habitation, and at length found it in this Country, where they now inhabit, being admitted to ufe their own Religion, but yielding themfelves in fubjection to the government of the Nation, and paying homage and tribute, their Religion being different from the reft of the Inhabitants, I fhall thus defcribe to you.

They affirm that before any thing was, there was a God, who made the Heavens, and the Earth, and all things therein conteined: at fix times or labours, and between each labour, he refted five dayes, firft, He made the Heavens with their Orbs, adorned with great lights and leffer, as the Sun, Moon and Stars; alfo the Angels whom he placed in their feveral orders, according to their dignities, which place he ordained to be for the habitations of fuch as as fhould live holy in this

life; and this being done, he reſted five dayes. Then he made Hell in the lower parts of the world, from which he baniſhed all light and comfort, wherein were ſeveral Manſions that exceeded each other in dolour, proportioned for the degrees of Offenders; about which time *Lucifer* the chief of Angels, with other of his Order, conſpiring againſt God, to gain the Soveraignty and command over all; God threw him firſt from the Orb of his happineſs, together with his confederates and accomplices, damn'd him to Hell, the place that was made for offenders, and turn'd them from their glorious ſhapes, into ſhapes black, ugly and deformed, till the end of the world, when all offenders ſhall receive puniſhment; this was the ſecond labour. After this God created the earth and waters, making this world like a ball, in that admirable manner that now it is; this was the third labour. The fourth, was to make the Trees and Herbs; the fifth, was to make Beaſts, Fowls and Fiſhes; and the ſixth and laſt, Man and Woman, whoſe names were *Adamah* and *Evah*, and by theſe the world was propagated in this manner; *God* as they affirm, *did cauſe* Evah *to bring forth two twins every day for a thouſand years together, and none dyed.* Lucifer *being malicious, and endeavouring to do miſchief, God ſet certain Superviſors over his creatures:* Hamull *had charge of the Heavens,* Acob *of the Angels,* Foder *of the Sun, Moon, and Stars,* Soreh *of the Earth,* Jofah *of the Waters,* Sumbolah *of the Beaſts of the Field,* Daloo *of the Fiſh of the Sea,* Rocan *of the Tree* Cooz, *of Man and Woman, and* Settan *and* Afud *were Guardians of* Lucifer *and other evil ſpirits, who for all that did ſome miſchief, the ſins of men occaſioned the deſtruction of world by a flood which*

ſpared only a few to repeople the earth, which was done accordingly; and this is their opinion of the Creation and firſt Age. As to their Religion, it was given them by a Law-giver, whoſe name was *Zertooſt*, whoſe birth was ſtrange, and breeding and viſions miraculous; the names of his Father and Mother were *Eſpintaman* and *Dodoo*, he was born in *China*, and great fame going of him when young, the King of that Country endeavoured his deſtruction, but could not bring it to paſs, for thoſe who were ſent to deſtroy him, had their ſinews ſhrunk; he being twelve or thirteen years of age, was taken with a great ſickneſs, the King hearing thereof, ſent Phyſicians to deſtroy him; but *Zertooſt* ſenſible of their practiſe, refuſed their Phyſick, and fled with his Father and Mother into *Perſia;* in his way meeting with Rivers, he congeal'd them them to ice, and ſo went over: he arrived at *Perſia* in the time of the Raign of *Guſtaſph;* it was in that Country that at his requeſt to God, he being purified, was carried up into heaven, where he heard the Almighty ſpeaking, as in flames of fire, who revealed to him the works of the Creation, and what was to come, and gave him Laws for the better government and eſtabliſhment of Religion: *Zertooſt* deſired to live alwayes, that he might inſtruct the world in Religion; but God anſwered, *That if he ſhould live never ſo long, yet* Luciſer *would do more harm then he ſhould do good: but if he deſired to live ſo long as the world endured he might.* God alſo preſented to *Zertooſt* the ſeven ages or times of the *Perſian* Monarchy; the firſt was the Golden Age, the days of *Guiomaras*, ſecond, the Silver, the dayes of *Fraydhun:* third, the Brazen, the dayes of *Kaykodoy*, the fourth, the Tin, the dayes of

Loraſph; fifth, Leaden, the dayes of *Bahaman*, ſixth, the Steel, the dayes of *Darab Segner;* the ſeventh, the Iron Age, in the Raign of *Yeſdegerd:* He finding by this that the times would be worſe and worſe, deſired to live no longer than till he had diſcharged his Meſſage, and then that he might be tranſlated to the ſame place of glory; ſo he was reduced to his proper ſenſe, and remained in heaven many dayes; and then having received the Book of the Law, and the heavenly fire, he was conveyed by an Angel to earth again. But the Angel had no ſooner left him, but *Lucifer* met him; but notwithſtanding his perſwaſions, he went on in his deſigns of revealing the Law, which he did firſt to his Father and Mother, and by their means it came to the ears of *Guſtaſph*, then King of *Perſia*, who ſending for him, he told the King every circumſtance, ſo that the King began to incline to his religion, often ſending for and converſing with him. The Churchmen of that time endeavoured to put infamy upon *Zertooſt*, by perſwading the King that he was an Impoſtor and of unclean living, for that he had the bones of humane bodies under his bed, the King hearing this ſent to ſearch, and found it ſo to be, for theſe Church-men had cauſed them to be conveyed thither; wherefore *Zertooſt*, by order of the King, was put in priſon: but there happened an occaſion, that he was not only ſoon releaſed, but alſo brought into the Kings favour; for the King having a Horſe, that he prized, that fell ſick, and no perſon able to cure him, *Zertooſt* undertook the cure, and performed it; and working ſome other miracles, was now of good credit, and eſteemed as a man come from God; ſo that now his Book gained an eſteem, and the King himſelf told him, That *if he would grant him four demands, he would believe his*

Law, and be a Profeſſor thereof. The demands were theſe; Firſt, *That he might aſcend to Heaven, and deſcend when he liſt.* Secondly, *That he might know what God would do at preſent, and in time to come.* Thirdly, *That he might never dye.* Fourthly, *That no inſtrument whatſoever might have power to wound or hurt him. Zertooſt* did conſent that all this might be done, but not by one perſon; and therefore to the firſt, *Guſtaſph* had power to aſcend to, and deſcend from Heaven, granted to him. The ſecond, which was to know what would fall out, preſent and hereafter, was granted to the Kings Church-man. The third, which was to live for ever, was granted to *Guſtaſph's* eldeſt Son, named *Diſchiton*, who yet lives as they ſay, at a place in *Perſia*, called *Demawando Lohoo*, in a high Mountain, with a guard of thirty men; to which place all living creatures are forbidden to approach, leſt they ſhould live for ever, as they do who abide there. The laſt, which was never to be wounded with inſtrument or weapon, was granted to the youngeſt Son of *Guſtaſph*, called *Eſplandiar*. So *Guſtaſph*, and the other three mentioned, proving the power of theſe ſeveral gifts, all determined to live according to the precepts in *Zertooſt* Book, he unfolding the contents thereof, which were theſe: This Book contained three ſeveral Tracts, the firſt whereof was of Judicial Aſtrology; the ſecond was of Phyſick; the third, was called *Zertooſt*, and this was of matters of Religion: And theſe three Tracts were delivered to the *Magi's*, *Phyſicians* and *Church-men*, called *Darooes*; theſe Tracts were devided into Chapters, ſeven were in the *Wiſemen* or *Jeſopps* Book, ſeven in the *Phyſicians*, and ſeven in the *Darooes* Book; the

two firſt is unlawful or unneceſſary, I ſhall omit it, and proceed to the third. The Diciſion of men being Laity and Clergy; and thoſe of the Clergy being ordinary or extraordinary, *It pleaſed God*, ſay the *Perſees*, *to divide and apportion his Law among theſe men.* Firſt, therefore, to the *Lay-man* God gave five Commandments:

1. To have ſhame over them, as a remedy againſt ſin, for that will keep them from oppreſſing his inferiours, from ſtealing, from being drunk, and from bearing falſe witneſs.

2. To have fear alwayes preſent, that they might not commit ſin.

3. When they go about any thing, to think whether it be good or bad, ſo to do it or let it alone.

4. That the ſight of God's creatures, in the morning put them in mind to give God thanks for them.

5. That when they pray by day, they turn their faces towards the Sun; and by night towards the Moon.

Theſe are the precepts enjoyned the Lay-men, thoſe of the common Church-man follow, who are bound to keep, not only theſe appropriated to him, but the preceding precepts.

1. To pray after the manner is deſcribed in *Zundaveſtaw*, for God is beſt pleaſed with that form.

2. To keep his eyes from coveting any thing that is anothers.

3. To have a great care to ſpeak the truth alwayes, becauſe *Lucifer* is the Father of falſhood.

4. To meddle with no bodies buſineſs but his own, and not meddle with the things of the world; for the Lay-man ſhall provide all things needful for him.

5. To learn the *Zundaveſtaw* by heart, that he may teach the Lay-man.

6. To keep himſelf pure as from dead carcaſes, or unclean meats, leſt he be defiled.

7. To forgive all injuries, in imitation of God, who daily forgives us.

8. To teach the common people to pray, to pray with them for any good: and when they come to the place of worſhip, to joyn in common prayer together.

9. To give Licence for Marriage, and to marry men and women, the Parents not having power to do it without the conſent of the *Herbood.*

10, To ſpend the greateſt part of their time in the Temple, that he may be ready on all occaſions.

11. And laſt Injunction is, upon pain of Damnation, to believe no other Law but that of *Zertooſt*, and not to add to it, nor diminiſh it.

Theſe are the precepts enjoyned the *Herbood*, the *Diſtoore* being the High Prieſt, who commands all the reſt, is enjoyned not only theſe of the *Layman* or *Behedin*, theſe of the *Herbood* or Churchmen, but 13 more of his own, which are theſe that follow.

1. That he muſt never touch any of a ſtrange Caſt or Sect, of what Religion foever; nor any Layman of his own Religion, but he muſt waſh himſelf.

2. That he muſt do all his own work, in token of humility, and for purity, *viz.* Set his own hearbs, Sow his own grain, and dreſs his own meat, unleſs he have a Wife to do it for him, which is not uſual.

3. That he take Tyth or Tenth of the *Behedin*, as Gods due, and diſpoſe of it as he thinks fit.

4. That he muſt uſe no Pomp or ſuperfluity, but either give all away in charity, or beſtow it in building of Temples.

5. That his houſe be near the Church, where he muſt retire himſelf, living recluſe in Prayer.

6. That he muſt live purer than others, both

in frequent waſhings and dyet, and alſo ſequeſter himſelf from his Wife in time of her pollutions.

7. That he be learned, and knowing all the ſeveral Books of *Zertooſt*, as well the Aſtrological and Phyſical parts, as the other.

8. That he muſt never eat and drink exceſſively.

9. That he fear no body but God, and ſin; and not fear what *Lucifer* can do to him.

10. That God having given him power in matters of the ſoul; therefore when any man ſins he may tell him of it, be he never ſo great; and every man is to obey him, as one that ſpeaketh not his own cauſe, but Gods.

11. That he be able to diſcern in what manner God comes to reveal himſelf, in what manner *Lucifer*.

12. That he reveal not what God manifeſteth to him by Viſions.

13. That he keep an ever-living fire, that never may go out; which being kindled by that fire that *Zertooſt* brought from heaven, may endure for all ages, till fire ſhall come to deſtroy all the world, and that he ſay his prayers over it.

This is a Summary of thoſe precepts contained in the book of their Law, that *Zertooſt* is by them affirmed to bring from heaven; and that religion which *Guſtaſph* with his followers embraced, perſwaded by the aſore-mentioned Miracles wrought by *Zertooſt* among them.

The 3*d*. particular in this Tract is the rights and ceremonies obſerved by this Sect, differencing them from others.

Firſt, Though their Law allows them great liberty in meats and drinks; yet becauſe they will not diſpleaſe the *Banians* and *Moors*, they abſtain from Kine and Hogsfleſh; they eat alone, and drink in ſeveral Cups.

2. They obſerve 6 Feaſts in the Year, according to the 6 works of the Creation.

3. As for their Faſts, after every one of their Feaſts they eat but one Meale a day for 5 days together; and when they eat Fleſh they carry part of it to the Temple as an offering.

Their worſhip of Fire is taken from *Zertooſts* bringing it from Heaven, and it being enjoyned them: for the nature of it, that which he brought, could not be extinguiſhed; whether that be preferred is unknown, but upon effect thereof they are licenſed to compoſe a fire of ſeveral mixtures, which is of ſeven ſorts; when they meet about that ceremony beſtowed on this Fire, the *Deſtoore* or *Herbood*, together with the Aſſembly encompaſs it about, and ſtanding about 11 or 12 foot diſtance, the *Deſtoore* or *Herbood* uttereth this ſpeech. *That foraſmuch as Fire was delivered to* Zertooſt *their Law-giver from God Almighty, who pronounced it to be his vertue and excellence, that therefore they ſhould reverence it, and not abuſe it in the ordinary uſe thereof, as to put water in it, or ſpit in it, &c.*

At the birth of a child the *Daroo* or Churchman is ſent for, who calculates the nativity of the Child, and the Mother names it without any ceremony; after this it is carried to the Church, and water is poured thereon, and prayer uſed, *That God would cleanſe it from the uncleanneſs of the Father, and menſtruous pollutions of the Mother.* At 7 years of age he is led by the Parents into the Church to have Confirmation, where he is taught Prayers, and inſtructed in Religion, and being waſhed, he is cloathed in a linnen Caſſock, and other habits, which he ordinarily wears, and ſo is admitted into their Sect.

They have a five-fold kind of marriage, for which they have feveral terms; the moſt ſingular, is that of hiring a mans Son or Daughter to be marched to their dead Daughter or Son, with whom they are contracted. The ceremony obſerved in their Marriages is performed at Midnight, not in the Church, but upon a bed, by two Churchmen, one in behalf of the Man, the other in behalf of the Woman, who ask if they are willing to be married, and they joyn hands, the Man promiſing to provide for the Woman, and give her fome Gold to bind her to him; and the Woman promifeth all ſhe hath is his; then the Churchmen ſcattering rice, prays that they may be fruitful, and ſo they conclude, celebrating the Marriage feaſt for 8 days together.

As for burial they have two places or Tombs, built of a round form, a pretty height from the ground; within they are paved with ſtone, in a ſhelving manner, in the midſt a hollow pit to receive the confumed bones; about the walls are the ſhrowded and ſheeted Carkaſſes laid both of Men and Women, expoſed to the open Air. Thefe 2 Tombs are diſtant from one another; the one is for the good livers, the other for the wicked. When any are ſick unto death, the *Herbood* is fent for, who prays in the ears of the ſick man: and when he is dead he is carried on an Iron biere; all who accompany them are interdicted all fpeech; only the Churchman, when the body is laid in the burial place, faith thus, *This our Brother whilſt he lived conſiſted of the* 4 *Elements, now he is dead let each take his own, Earth to Earth, Air to Air, Water to Watar, and Fire to Fire.* This done they pray to *Sertun* and *Aſud*, that they would keep the Devils from their deceaſed Bro-

ther when he repairs to their holy Fire to purge himſelf; for they ſuppoſe the Soul wandreth three days on the earth, in which time *Lucifer* moleſteth it; for ſecurity from which moleſtation, it flyes to their fire, ſeeking preſervation there; which time concluded, it receiveth juſtice or reward, Hell or Heaven; and therefore they for thoſe three days offer up Prayers Morning Noon and Night, that God would be merciful to the Soul departed, and forgive his ſins. After three days are expired they make a feſtival, and conclude their mourning.

CHAP. III.

The Arrival of the Engliſh Fleet, His entertaining of ſix Engliſhmen, an account of whoſe Adventures is promiſed him by one of the Company.

I Had now ſpent ſeveral Months in my Voyage by Sea, perambulations by Land, and obſervations of the Country in general, and this more particular diſcovery of the Laws and manners both Civil and Eccleſiaſtical of the Inhabitants; a juſt account whereof I have given you in the foregoing Chapters: And now we dayly expected the return of Ships from *England*, and therefore every one provided to be furniſhed with all things neceſſary againſt their arrival: The Merchants who were reſident on ſhore had every day ſeveral ſorts of commodities brought out of the Country in Waggons drawn by Oxen, ſo that their Storehouſes were filled; and I for my part provided my ſelf with all ſorts of Liquors and Victuals that the Country afforded.

At the time uſual the Fleet arrived, which conſiſted of 4 Ships, whereof 3 was on the account

of the Company, and the 4th by their permiſſion, came as an Interloper: Thoſe that came on account of the Company were provided with all things neceſſary, by the order of the Conſul or Preſident; and the other Ships Company being left to ſhift for themſelves, took up my houſe for their quarters. The chief of the Company that lodged with me conſiſted of 6 perſons, two whereof ſeemed to be very handſome young men, of about 18 years of age; theſe two were very well reſpected, as well by the Captain as the others his Companions; they were all very frolick, blith, and merry, and ſeveral times laughed at ſeveral adventures that had befall'n them during the Voyage.

Though the Captain of this Ship came not on the Companies account, yet he was very richly loaden, and was directed to ſuch perſons of this Country as would be ſure to do his buſineſs for him; neither was he a ſtranger therein, for he had been here twice before, and was acquainted with moſt of the *Banians*, who are ſo curious and diligent obſervers, that if they ſee a man but once, if he ever return, though ſeveral years after, yet they will know him again, eſpecially if they have had any trading with them; and they have ſo good a conceit of our Countrymen, that they will oftentimes truſt a Captain with 2 or 300*l.* worth of Commodities from one year to another, only giving them common intereſt; and as to their ordinary dealing and bargaining, they are at a word, and there is money to be ſaved by dealing with them, and truſting them, for if you diſtruſt them, then you ſhall pay ſo much the more; if you truſt them they will provide your goods as cheap or cheaper than you can your ſelf do it, though never ſo well experienced therein; I needed not to acquaint our Captain with any of

their faſhions, for he well enough underſtood it himſelf; but I aſſiſted him and ſome of the reſt in exchanging their monies; for the *Banians* allow no more for any Silver or Gold Coin than it weighs; for it will never goe currant there, till it be changed or minted into the Coin of the Country.

Four of my Gueſts, *Viz.* The Captain, and three of the reſt did employ themſelves in looking after the Ships unlading; but the other two, who were the youngeſt (and therefore, as I thought, fitteſt to take pains) did ſtill ſtay at home in my houſe, or elſe walk out for their recreation. This, and ſome other things that I obſerved, made me curious in my obſervations of them in all their actions, ſuſpecting they were either perſonages of greater quality than ordinary, or that there was ſome other myſtery in the caſe: but they being as cunning as my ſelf concealed that from me which I ſince knew, though I tryed them with ſeveral ſpeeches and diſcourſes, in which I thought my ſelf cunning enough; I obſerved this, that theſe two young men never lay together, but ſometimes the Captain lay with one of them, and another perſon of his company with the other. The greateſt part of their buſineſs being for the preſent diſpatched, they often times ſtaid at home and feaſted, where they drank off great quantities of *Perſian* Wine, and other the Country drinks, the beſt I could get for them. They having all drank one time to a good height, and being very merry, the Captain asked which was the beſt houſe for handſome Women now. I informed him of the beſt I knew; but ſays he, *yee have no Engliſh Girls here*, no ſaid I, ſeldom any ſuch bleſſings come into this Country, we are forced to content our ſelves with the brown Natives: *I believe*, ſaid the Captain, *if theſe two young men*,

William *and* George (for ſuch was the names of the two young men I ſpake of) *were hanſomly dreſt in Womens cloaths, they would paſs for hanſom Women.* I then of a ſudden turning my eyes towards the parties he ſpake of, ſaw that their cheeks were dy'd of a Vermilion hew, deeper than lately they had acquired by drinking: This cauſed me to diſtruſt ſomething; but the reſt of the Company falling into a kind of a laughter, which I ſuppoſed was ſomewhat forced, they altered their diſcourſe, and began a freſh health to all their friends in *England*, which I pledged them with a very good will, telling them that I had ſome, whoſe company I had heartily wiſhed for; *what are they*, ſaid the Captain; Sir, ſaid I, they are ſuch as I beleeve you love, that is, hanſom Women in general; and of theſe I had the good fortune to be particularly and intimately acquainted with ſeveral. At the ending of this diſcourſe, I was called for down to attend ſome of my gueſts who were going, which having done, I again went up, where I found the Captain and the reſt in a ſtanding poſture, ready likewiſe to be gone, at which I wondred, but let them take their pleaſures: So five of my ſix gueſts left me, and he had gone too had he not been a little fluſtred, and then a ſleep. After they were gone ſeveral thoughts poſſeſt my mind of what theſe two youngeſt perſons ſhould be; and it was long ere I could hit upon the right, but having one perſon in the houſe, with whom I was more intimate than the reſt, I reſolved to uſe my utmoſt intereſt with him to be ſatisfyed: he in few hours awaked, and would have been gone after his companions; but I ſo far prevailed with him, that he lay there that night; and becauſe I would have the better opportunity for my diſcourſe, I lay with him; when we were in Bed,

I told him, that I could heartily wiſh I could accommodate him with a female Bedſellow; he replyed, *that would do very well;* I offered my aſſiſtance in procuring the beſt of our Country, but he was cold in his reply; whereupon I told him, that by that time he had been ſo long in the Country as I had, he would be glad of one of thoſe whom I ſometimes made a ſhift to ſpend a night with: but continued I, I had rather be at Mother *Cr*—— in *Moorfields:* Are you acquainted there, replyed my Bedſellow, yes, ſaid I, and at moſt of thoſe houſes of hoſpitality in or about *London*, to which Colledges I was a good Benefactor; why, ſaid my Bedſellow, you have bin right; or elſe I had never come hither, ſaid I: whereupon I acquainted him with many of my rambles about *London*, and gave him ſuch ſatisfaction in my diſcourſe that he began to be more free with me; and then I conjured him to deal truly with me in reſolving me one queſtion, to which he promiſed me, that he would: I having gained thus much upon him, told him that my requeſt was to know what thoſe two young perſons were, which were called *William* and *George:* truly ſaid he, you could not have asked me anything that I ſhould be more unwilling to diſcover than that; but ſince I have promiſed you I will tell you, and that the truth without any diſguiſe, provided, you ſwear to me, not to diſcover or take any notice thereof without my conſent, to this I agreed, and having ſworn to him, he told me, that they were not of thoſe names, nor ſex, that they went for, but Women. I told him I had long ſince doubted ſo much, and now I knew it, I would take no notice thereof, but rather aſſiſt than hinder any deſign wherein there was ſo much pleaſure, for I had bin as very a wag as any of them, and had in

my time run through as many and various adventures as any man of my age; he hearing me ſay ſo, asked me where I had lived, and the moſt part of my life: I without any diſſembling, gave him a ſhort account of my life, which ſo pleaſed him, that we ſpent moſt part of the night therein, and at my earneſt requeſt he promiſed me that the next day, he would give me an account of his life, and adventures, wherein ſaid he, you will find ſo many different chances of fortune, as had hardly befallen any man, and I hope ſaid he, I ſhall be able to give you a good account thereof: for ſince my coming from *England*, I have had time to recollect my ſelf, of ſome things that elſe I had forgotten, but now I have placed the chief paſſages of my life into ſuch a Method, as I ſhall be very exact in; though I was impatient to hear what he promiſed me, yet the night being far ſpent, ſleep ſeized on us both for ſome hours, but awaking in the morning, and putting him in mind of his promiſe, after a mornings draught taken, and a command that none ſhould interrupt us, he began as follows.

CHAP. IV.

The Traveller deſcribeth the place of his birth and Parents, the death of his elder Brother, and how through the perſwaſion of his Father; he reſolved to follow thieving.

I was born in *Goldin-Lane*, a place ſcituate in the Suburbs of *London*, my Fathers name was *Iſaac*, and by reaſon of his ſmall ſtature was commonly called little *Iſaac*, being a native of the ſame place, and by profeſſion a Cobler; but ſuch was his courage that he was much troubled when any one called him Cobler; and would reply, that he was a Tranſlator, or a Tranſmographer of ſhooes. His Wife, who I believe was my Mother, was named *Urſula*; ſhe was in the beginning of her dayes one of thoſe ſort of people that we call *Gipſies*, or *Canting-Beggars*, and my Father travelling into the Country, and wanting money to pay for a bed at night, he was forced to take up his lodging in a barn, where he firſt came to be acquainted with my Mother; whether they were ever married or no, I cannot tell, though I ſuppoſe they only took each others words, as being willing to ſave the charge of a Prieſts-hire. But notwithſtanding the darkneſs of her complexion (as thoſe ſort of people com-

monly have,) there is not ſo bad a Jill, but there is as bad a Jack, for it was not long before ſhe hornifid my Father by a Banbury Tinker: which thing was ſo well known amongſt the neighbors, that they would commonly make horns with their fingers, and point at him as he paſſed along the ſtreets. My eldeſt brother at ſeven years of age attained to ſuch ingenuity that he ſeldom carried home any mended ſhooes to a Gentlemans or Citizens houſe, but he would filch either linnen, ſilver-ſpoons, or ſomething elſe of worth, which by negligent ſervants was not laid up ſafely; which trade he drave for ſome ſpace of time, being by reaſon of his childiſh years not in the leaſt ſuſpected, but the pitcher goes not ſo often to the well, but at length it comes broken home: In proceſſe of time he was taken with the theft, and for the ſame carried to *Newgate*, where poor little Angel (peace be with him) he dyed in priſon, under the pennance of a diſcipline which was applied to him with a little too much rigour.

Our whole family ſmarted in his puniſhment, my father ſighed, my mother ſobbed, and I wanted my part of thoſe dainty morſels, which his theft furniſhed us withall, for by him my father drave a pretty trade; having thoſe who always furniſhed him with ready money for whatſoever he brought, and indeed his loſs would have utterly diſconſolated my father, but the great hopes that he had in mee, who was now come to the ſame age that my brother was of when he firſt began to exerciſe his gifts in the myſtery of theivery; and that I might tread the ſame ſteps that my brother had done before me, my father (upon a certain day, when my mother and he and

I were alone by our ſelves) began thus for to endoctrinate me.

My ſon (ſaid he) the profeſſion of a thief is not of ſo baſe repute as the world gives it out, conſidering what brave men have in former times exerciſed themſelves in this way: I have heard the Clerk of our pariſh ſay, who I aſſure you was a well read man, that *Robin Hood* that famous thief was in his yonger dayes Earl of *Huntingdon*; and that *Alexander the Great* was no better then a thief in robbing other Princes of their Kingdoms and Crowns. (*This it ſeems he ſpake in vindication of the Sexton, who uſed to rob the dead corps of their ſheets and ſhirts, and thoſe other neceſſaries which they carried along with them in their voyage to heaven.*) I tell thee he who ſteales not, knows not how to live in this world, nay doth not almoſt each thing in the world teach us for to ſteal? doe we not ſee youth ſteal upon infancy, manhood ſteale upon youth, and old age upon manhood, until at laſt death ſtealeth upon us undiſcern'd and bringeth us to our long homes: How doth ſummer ſteal on the ſpring, autumn on ſummer, and winter on autumn, untill all the whole year is ſtole out of our ſight. Pray what doe rich Farmers and griping Cormorants, but ſteal when they exact in their prices of corn, and grind the faces of the poor; and how can ſhopkeepers wipe off the aſperſion of theft from themſelves when they ſell a commodity for twice the worth of it, and thereby cozen the buyer; ſo that we ſee if things be rightly ſcanned, there be more thieves in the world than only Taylors, Millers, and Weavers. And what I pray you makes Serjants, Bayliffs, and Catchpoles ſo to

envy us, and perſecute us as they doe, but that one trade ſtill envies and malignes another; and would by their good wills ſuffer no other theives but themſelves; this it is that makes them ſo double diligent in the ſurprizal of us, though oftentimes our craft foreſtals their malice, as I ſhall inſtance to you in one memorable example.

My ſelf and two of my comrades had agreed to rob a rich Uſurer, whoſe younger brother having vitiouſly waſted his eſtate, was forced to take this his brothers houſe for ſanctuary, where he kept as cloſe as a ſnail in his ſhell, unleſs only at ſuch times when as he imagined the darkneſs of the night might ſhrewd him in obſcurity, he ſo dreaded theſe ſhoulder clappers, who ſtick cloſer to a man than a bur on his cloak, for being once got into their clutches, you may as ſoon wring *Hercules* club out of his fiſt, as get free from their fingers; and herein have thieves a great priviledge over debters, for the moſt notorious thief that ever was, once in a months time he is carted out of priſon, as others for ſmaller matters are freed from durance by following the cart, where a fellow with a catt of nine tayles doth play him ſuch a leſſon, as makes him to skip and mount for joy of his deliverance; but with a poor debter the caſe is far different, for being once in priſon, the beſt teame of Horſes that ever drew in a waggon, cannot draw him out from thence without a ſilver hook.

But to ſpeak of that (ſome) which more properly belongs unto thee (for I ſuppoſe thou wilt never attain to ſuch credit as for to be laid up in priſon for debt,) by the help of a ſervant of the houſe, who

went ſharers with us in our prey, we got a falſe key made to the back door, whereby (one night) we attained an eaſie entrance, and loaded our ſelves, to our hearts content; but in our return one of our companions chanced to ſneeze, and therewithal brake wind ſo violently behind, that it waked the old uſurer, who ſuſpitious of the leaſt noiſe preſently cryed out *Thieves, thieves: Truſty Roger* his man was very ready to riſe at firſt allarm, fearing that our diſcovery might prove prejudicial to his liberty, and lighting a candle, pretended to ſearch every hole in the houſe, into which it was poſſible for a mouſe to enter; In the meane time we lay cloſe, yet not, unperceived by this falſe ſervant, who very formally told his Maſter that all was ſafe and well, and that he might take his reſt without any fear; But the dread of his hearing us prolonged our ſtay, ſo long, that day began to approach, whereupon fearing more danger from without than from within, we prepared for our departure, but having opened the door, we found that we had leapt out of the frying pan into the fire, and by ſhunning *Scylla* were fallen into *Charibdis*, for four of theſe Catchpoles were waiting at the door for the Uſurers brother, having intelligence belike that he uſed to make the dusky morning and dark evening the two ſhrowds that carried him ſafely out and into his Brothers houſe; Now I going out of the door firſt, one of theſe robuſtious fellows laid hands upon me, taking me for the party they waited for, my two companions endeavouring to refcue me were ſeized on by the other three Baylifs, ſo that we ſeeing no hopes of efcape, reſolved to cry whore firſt, and with

ſull mouth cryed out *Thieves, thieves; Truſty Roger* and the man that ſhould have been arreſted, hearing this cry, took weapons in their hands, and out of doors they came, where *Roger* ſoon perceiving how the buſineſs went *ah you Rogues* (ſaid he) *doe you come to rob my Maſter?* and thereupon laid ſo nimbly about him, being ſeconded by the other, that the Bailiffs were glad to let us go to defend themſelves. Whileſt they were thus buſied in pelting each other, we ſlipped away with our prize, and to take a ſull revenge of thoſe Catch-poles, raiſed ſeveral of the neighbors, whom we ſent to the apprehending of the Bayliffs, whileſt we marched away in ſafety; what became of them afterwards I doe not know, onely this I tell thee, to let thee ſee that there is not any danger whatſoever ſo great, but by wit and cunningneſs may be avoided. This ſtory I heard with great attention which ſo wrought upon my mind that I thought my ſelf no leſs than a ſecond *Robin Hood* or little *John*, and thereupon reſolved to put in ſpeedy execution my fathers dictates which yet proved very unfortunate to me, as you will finde by that which follows.

CHAP. V.

His robbing of Orchards, how he was catcht by a Night-ſpell; the extremity their family was brought unto, and how to relieve it, he robbed a Grocer.

MY mind being thus ſully fixt to follow thieving, I began my trade in robbing of Orchards, returning home with laden thighs, the trophies, and ſpoils of Cherry-trees, Pear-trees, and Plum-trees. My mother inſtead of correcting me for what I had done, encouraged me to proceed on as I had begun; for indeed hunger had pinched us ſorely ever ſince my brothers death, my fathers credit being ſo eclipſed thereby, that until people ſaw he would mend his life, ſcarce any one would employ him to mend their ſhoes. One Orchard I eſpecially haunted it being ſtor'd with moſt gallant fruit, whoſe very looks me thought did cry, *Come eat me:* but ſo often I frequented the ſame, eſpecially one tree of more choice fruit than all the reſt, that the owner of the Orchard (being a rich miſerable chuff, and one who knew on which ſide his bread was butter'd) began to miſtruſt the ſame, and therefore that his apples might not depart away without firſt taking leave of him, he reſolved for

the future to prevent the ſame, and having ſome little skill in negromancy, againſt my next coming he inchanted his Orchard with a Night-ſpel.

This he placed at the fourcorners of his Orchard, in the hour of *Mars*, and is of ſuch force being rightly applyed, that who ever comes within the bounds thereof, muſt be forced to ſtay there till Sun-riſing. Now I that knew not any thing of what was done, according to my accuſtomed courſe, having the dark night for my coverture, boldly enter'd the Orchard, with winged haſte aſcended upon one of the trees, where having filled a bag with Apples which my mother had furniſhed me withal for that purpoſe, I thought to depart away as formerly I had done, but the caſe was quite alter'd from what was before; for I found my ſelf in ſuch a Labyrinth that the beſt clue of my invention could not winde me out; Here did I wander about with my bag on my ſhoulders (having not the power in the leaſt to lay it down) till ſuch time as *Aurora* begun to uſher in the day, when the old chuff enter'd the Orchard to ſee what fiſh his net had caught, reſolving with ſeverity to puniſh the *Caitifs* that had ſtoln away his goods, but in ſtead of a Gudgeon finding but a ſprat, beholding my Childiſh years, he could not imagine me to be the Author of ſo much wrong as he had received; and thereupon altering his reſolution of breaking arms and leggs as he firſt intended, he ſtepped back to his houſe & fetched from thence a great burchin rod, the inſtrument wherewith he intended to chaſtiſe me withal, with much ſilence he approached unto me; (for a words ſpeaking would diſſolve the

charm) and having with ſome ſtrugling untruſt my Breeches, laying me over his knee, he began to exercife the office of a Pedagogue upon me; now I having for fome ſpace of time before eaten nothing but green fruit, had gotten a terrible loofenefs, which with the fright that I was in, and the fmart that I felt, wrought fuch effects in my belly, that opening my poſteriors, I difcharged a whole volley of excrements in his face. This action of mine made him at once to ſhut his eyes, open his mouth, and unloofe his hands, fo that the charm being broken, and my body at liberty, I quickly conveyed my felf out of the Orchard, leaving the old catterpillar in a very ſtinking condition, not to be remedied without the benefit of that cleanſing element of water.

Warned by this difaſter, I was very fearful to enter into any more Orchards, and indeed had I met no Remora in my proceedings, yet this trade would foon have failed, for not long after the Apples were all tranfplated out of the Orchard into the Cellar, and winter began to haſten on apace. And now hunger which will not be treated withal without bread, began to reign Lord and King in our family; the Chandler would let us have no more cheefe for chalk, nor peny loaves for round O's, we had made a black poaſt white already with our fcore, and his belief would extend no further to truſt us for any more: nay the very Ale-houfe-keeper (to whom we were fuch conſtant cuſtomers) was now grown fuch a Nullifidian, that he would not believe us for fmall-beer, wherefore we were forced to make a vertue of neceffity, and to prevent ſtarving, our houſhold

goods marched away one after another; the firſt thing that we fold was the Cup-board as the moſt unneceſſary thing in all the houſe, having no victuals to put therein; foon after followed the Table as an appendix to it, for feeing the Table will hold no victuals thereon for us to eat, we in revenge thereof did eat up the Table; That (with ſome joynt-ſtools belonging to it) being devoured and gone, our ſtomacks were fo hot that it ſoon melted away the pewter diſhes; for we conſidered with our felves that good meat might be eaten out of wooden platters; then followed the napkins and table-cloaths, for we were not fo much cloyed with fat meat but that a little linnen would ſerve to wipe the greace off of our fingers; in fine this pinching hunger was the *Habeas corpus* that removed all our goods out of the Houſe unto the Brokers, and now our dwelling place correſponded with our bellies, being alike both empty.

In this comfortleſs condition we remained for the ſpace of three days, having neither money nor any thing to make money of; being thus fadly neceſſitated, my father and I fet our witts upon the Tenter-hooks which way to recruit our decayed eſtate, many inventions we had for that purpofe, and preſent neceſſity urged us to make a ſpeedy uſe of one of them, which not long after we brought to paſs in this manner.

It being then winter time, the Evenings long and dark, we bought a Link for three pence, the remainder of our whole eſtate; with this about ten of the clock in the night we marched out, refolving to faſten on the faireſt opportunity that ſhould pre-

ſent its ſelf to our ſight; many ſtreets we traverſed, but found not any thing that might anſwer either our intent or expectation. Coming at laſt to *Baſing-lane*, and caſting our wandring eyes into a Shop, we there eſpyed a Grocer telling of money on a Counter, being lighted only by a ſingle candle; this made for our purpoſe, whereupon my father planting himſelf, I boldly entered the Shop, deſiring him to give me leave to light my Link; which being granted, I with the ſame ſoon popt out his Candle, ſnatching up a handful of mony, ran out of the doors with the ſame as faſt as I could; the Grocer haſted after me amain, in the mean time my father ſtept into the ſhop, and took away the remainder of the mony. My nimbleneſs had ſoon out ſtripped the Grocer, who returned back, and found that the Devil might dance upon his Counter, for there was never a croſs to keep him from it. About an hour after we met together at home, where having counted our purchaſe, we found it amounted to ſeven pounds eighteen ſhillings and ſix pence. So long as this mony laſted, the pot, the ſpit, and pitcher was never idle; but what was thus got over the Devils back was ſoon ſpent under his belly, and in a ſhort time we were reduced to as great want as we were in before.

CHAP. VI.

He cheateth a Cutler, afterwards robbeth a bacon man, his father is preſt away for a Soldier, his mother dyeth, and he being left alone goeth to live with an uncle, where he acteth many Roguerics.

NEceſſity is the beſt whetſtone to ſharpen the edge of a mans invention, when the gutts begin to grumble againſt the belly for want of food, oh in what a confuſion is then this little microcoſme of ours? how is the invention rack'd, tortur'd and ſtretched forth to ſupply that defect, my hungry belly found this to be too true, which made me ſet my wits on work for a ſpeedy remedy; a project quickly came into my head, but to effect the ſame I wanted mony; this was a double task for me to doe, but a willing minde overcomes all difficulties; away went I to a Cutlers, where in the cheapning of one knife, I ſtole another, and left the Cutler ſhould miſtruſt me, I came up to his price, but pretended I had forgotten my mony, and therefore muſt goe home and fetch it. This ſtoln knife I ſold for a groat, which money I intended for a bait to catch a bigger fiſh; ſome few ſtreets I traverſed before my project

would faften, at laft coming to *Warwick Lane* I faw in a Bacon-fhop a fellow ftanding in a pocket blew-apron whofe innocent looks gave me confident hopes of a golden prize; in I went and asked him the price of a pound of bacon, fix pence boy faid he of the rib, and four pence of the gammon; then give me a pound of the gammon (faid I) and here is a groat the whole eftate of a poor boy who hath been a long time in getting the fame. Whileft he was weighing it I told him I had a curft mother in law, who fed me only with a bit and a knock, which made me to go with an empty belly and a heart full of forrow; that if fhee fhould know I were in poffeffion of fo eatable a commodity, fhe would take it from me, and that fhe did often fearch my pocket for that purpofe: I therefore defired him to prevent the worft that might happen, to put the fame down my back betwixt my doublet and fhirt, which whilft he was doing, I leaning my head againft him, with a fhort knife cut the pocket out of his apron, and having thanked him very kindly, away I went, leaving my poor Bacon-man with a bottomlefs pennylefs pocket.

My purchafed prize was about thirty fhillings, of which fome four of it was in brafs farthings; but all was currant coyn that came into my hands, for I made no fcruple at all in the receiving it; with this I returned home, thinking to be received with much joy, as having gotten that in my pocket which would make us all merry, but the cafe was quite alter'd from what was before; my mother was on a fudden fallen fick, my father preffed for a foldier, & hurried away. This much abated the edge of my mirth, but my years not

being capable of much ſorrow, although my Mothers death enſued not long after, yet it was ſoon over, and indeed her outward condition was ſo deplorable, it had been almoſt impiety to have wiſhed her longer life.

Now though my condition was bad enough before, yet by my Mothers death it was much worſe; I was now left to the wide world, friendleſs, monyleſs, and pittyleſs, for not any one of the neighbors would give me entertainment, expecting no good fruit from the loyns of ſuch a bad ſtock. To follow my trade of theiving I began to dread, for every line, rope, & halter that I ſaw, methoughts did admoniſh me to leave it off, for fear I came home ſhort at laſt, and to follow the occupation of begging was then a very bad time to begin in, it being about the depth of winter: at laſt I remembred my Mother had a brother, a Barber-Chyrurgion, living in St. *Martins*; thither I went, acquainted him with his ſiſters death, my own ſad condition, and what a boy I would prove if it would pleaſe him to give me entertainment; he being ignorant of the trade that I drove, and moved with compaſſion at my pittiful tale, told me if I performed what I promiſed, I ſhould not want for any thing he could aſſiſt me in: hereupon I was had into the houſe, and though my Aunt ſcowled on me, my Uncle commanded my rags to be taken off, and a ſuit of one of my Couſins put upon me, as being the more durable, although my own were a thouſand ſtrong.

Having thus with the ſnake caſt my skin, and attained to good diet and lodging, I quickly began to be as briſk as a body-Lowſe, and to vapour

amongſt the boys like a Crow in a Gutter; and (notwithſtanding my promiſe) my mind was now wholly fixt upon Roguery, but in a lower orb than what I practiſed before, tending rather to mirth then much miſchief; to doe this I had ſeveral inventions, according as time and place were convenient; one of my firſt exployts was, that being ſent of an errand to a Grocers ſhop in a froſty morning, where was a pan of coals to warm their fingers, I ſecretly conveyed therein ſome Guinney peper, which ſet the Prentices in ſuch a violent coughing fit that they were not able to ſpeak to a Cuſtomer; their Miſtreſs hearing this noiſe below, came running down ſtaires, where ſenting the matter, ſhe began to ſpeak aloud at both ends, and being ſomething laxative by drinking of Sider, ſhe bewrayed in what a condition ſhe was in by what was ſcattered on the floar.

Sometimes would I in a clean place where wenches were to paſs, lay a train of Gun-powder; and at the very inſtant that they went along, ſet fire to it, which was a great pleaſure to my Worſhip to ſee how the poor Girles would skip and leap, juſt like a horſe when he hath a nettle under his tayle. At other times in the night would I tye a line from one ſide of the ſtreet to the other about half a foot high, whereby thoſe that came next were ſure to have a fall; nay I could not forbear to act my Rogueries in the Church it ſelf, having a Gooſe-quill filled with lice and fleas, which I would purchaſe of the Beggars for broken meat; theſe would I blow into the necks of the daintieſt Gentlewomen that I could ſee. At other times would I with a needle and

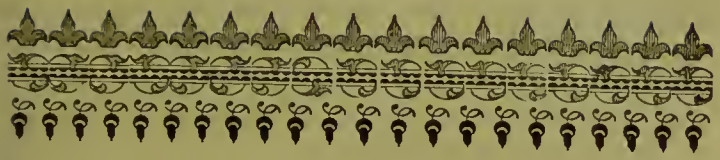
thread (which I always carried about with me in my pocket) ſow mens cloaks and womens Gowns together as they ſtood in the Crowd, ſo that when they went away, there would be ſuch pulling of one another, that they would never leave until one of their Garments had a piece of it rent out.

Amongſt other inſtruments of miſchief wherewith I exerciſed my ſelf, one was a hallow trunck to ſhoot with, in which I was ſuch an artiſt that I ſeldome miſt hitting the mark I aimed at; and that I might be the better undiſcovered I on purpoſe brake a hole in the glaſs-window, through which I uſed to ſhoot at my pleaſure, ſcarce could an oyſter-wench or Kitching-ſtuff wench paſs by, but I would hit her on the neck, hands, or ſome naked place, which would ſet her a rayling and ſcolding for a quarter of an hour together at ſhe knew not whom. One Monday morning a ſhoomakers maid had been fetching a great pitcher of beer for the Criſpins to begin their weeks work withall; now as ſhe ſayled along with the pitcher in her hand, which with the weight thereof drew her quite a one ſide, to prevent the wenches growing crooked thereby, I levell'd ſo right that I hit her on the fingers, ſo that down came the pitcher, and with the weight thereof brake all in pieces, and ſpilt the good liquor; the poor wench cryed pittyfully, the Criſpins ſtormed for looſing their mornings draughts, and being informed it was I that did it, they vowed to be revenged on me, which not long after they brought to paſs.

For I that could not live without Roguery no

more then a fiſh without water, ſtill continued my trade notwithſtanding all their threats. One day whileſt I was watching for my prey, thorow the hole of the glaſs-window aforeſaid, there came by a man with a basket of drinking-glaſſes on his head; ſcarce was he paſt me, when I ſaluted him with a dirt-bullet on the Calf of his leg, which made him give ſuch a leap, that down came the basket with the glaſſes clattering upon the ſtones, making ſuch a murther amongſt them, that never was a Citizen (though he owed ten thouſand pound more then he was worth) ſo much broken as they. The fellow ſeeing his glaſſes thus mortified, curſed moſt bitterly, breathing forth nothing but revenge, if he did but know who it was that did it. I who was conſcious of my own guilt, hearing him ſo to thunder, thought ſome of his anger might lighten on me, and therefore to prevent the worſt, I ran up the ſtairs, and hid my ſelf under the bed; but he that hath a bad name is worſe then half hang'd, the ſhoomakers who I had miſchiefed before, right or wrong, ſaid poſitively that it was I, urging him on to revenge hiſelf on my Uncles glaſs-windows; the fellow who was eaſily induced to believe what they ſaid, and to act accordingly, made no more adoe but up with his empty basket, and to revenge his quarrel made ſuch havock of the windows, that there was ſcarcely ever a quarrel leſt. O how did my Uncle look, and my Aunt ſcold to ſee their houſe thus metamorphoſed into the ſhape of a Bawdy-houſe; but it was in vain for them to complain, every one took the mans part, and laid all the blame of the miſchief upon me; hereupon was a privy ſearch made

all the houſe over for me, and being found my poor buttocks paid full dearly for the breaking of the windows, my Aunt ſtanding by all the while to ſee execution done upon me, and urging my Uncle on to beat me, for which I curſed her in my heart moſt bitterly.



CHAP. VII.

He diſcovers his Aunts playing looſe with a Shopkeeper, his Vncles invective againſt women.

MY Aunts unkindneſs to me vexed me to the heart, ſo that I vowed to my ſelf to be revenged on her; the print of the rod did not ſtick ſo faſt on my buttocks as the remembrance of her words did ſtick in my minde; I was not ſo watched by *Argus* as I watched her, for I knew that women were ſubject to many faults, and my Aunt as ſubject as any of the reſt; One Shopkeeper uſed conſtantly to haunt our houſe, not a day paſſed in which we had not his company; This man my uncle entertained with very much reſpect, for what reaſon I know not, unleſs it were that of the Poets.

Experience plainly doth unto us ſhew,
Cuckolds are kind to them that make them ſo.

One day my Uncle went forth to dreſs a patient, no ſooner was he gone but the Shopkeeper was there; Now our whole family conſiſted only of four perſons, my Uncle and Aunt, a maid and my

ſelf; in order therefore for their more privacy, the maid was ſent to the market to buy eggs, and my ſelf had liberty to go forth to play; I kindely thanked my Aunt for this courteſie, and taking my hatt, with a ſeeming forwardneſs pretended to go forth: but clapping to the door on the in ſide, I ſoftly ſneaked back and hid my ſelf under the ſtaires, where undiſcerned I could plainly ſee all the paſſages between my Aunt and the Shopkeeper. He thinking us gone, took my Aunt by the hand, and claſping his arm about her neck, fell to kiſſing her with as much eagerneſs as a hungry dog ſnatcheth at a bone; no doubt but her lips were very ſweet, for he was ſtill hanging at them as if he had taken a leaſe of them for three lives; at laſt my Aunt began to ſtruggle (I ſuppoſe for want of breath) and opening her mouth (which I wiſht a hundred times had been cloſed eternally) ſhe thus ſaid to him: *No piſh, why do you thus trifle? now that the Coaſt is clear, let us take time by the for-lock leſt we be prevented of our deſign: in ſooth you are ſo long about the prologue, as may chance to marr the Comedy; make not ſuch a long ſtop at the porch, but enter loves Cittadel, and ranſack all her treaſures*, and ſo giving him a ſhort kiſs, hand in hand up ſtairs they went. No ſooner were they gone, but I ſlipt out of my peeping hole, and coming to the door at the ſtairs foot, ſoftly locked the ſame, and putting the key in my pocket, with as little noyſe conveyed my ſelf out of the houſe.

Thus whileſt they were playing their game, I reſolved to play mine, and hiring a Porter, ſent him to my Uncle, to certifie him that my Aunt was

ſwounded away, and laid upon the bed in ſuch a condition as would grieve him to the heart to behold it, deſiring him to make all the haſte home that poſſibly he could; and having given him his meſſage, I ſtept aſide to a neighbors houſe to obſerve (when my uncle came home) how the project would take.

The Porter quickly diſpatched his errand, and my Uncle ſuddenly poſted home, where entering the houſe and finding not any one within, he began firſt to call for the maid, then for me, and laſt of all for my Aunt; but receiving no anſwer, he attempted to go up ſtairs, when the lockſmiths daughter denyed him entrance. The two Lovers (who by this time had verified the ſaying to be true, that a man may be made a Cuckold in the ſhort time of going to a neighbors houſe, as well as going a voyage to the *Weſt-Indies*) hearing my Uncle below, were almoſt diſtracted with this ſurprize; my Aunt dreaded my Uncles anger, knowing him to be of a very chollerick diſpoſition; and the poor Shopkeeper ſeared to be ſerved as the Country Clown ſerved the Curate whom he took in bed with his wife, and whom he thus menaced.

Make me a Cuckold, reading Rogue:
No pulpit ſerve but Suſan's,
Muſt Suſan's ſmock your pulpit be?
Ile take away that Nuſance.
And though Prieſt wept, and wife did beg,
Churl ſlighted words and tears,
And at one gaſh from Curate took
Muſquet and Bandaliers.

This feare of looſing his generals made him to ſhake worſe than if he had had a Tertian ague, and therefore to prevent it he crept underneath the bed, whileſt my Aunt went down ſtairs intending to ſmother up all with a diſſembling kiſs; but when ſhe ſaw the door was faſt, and my uncle asked her why ſhe locked it? ſhe could not tell what anſwer to make at preſent; but being well principled in the myſteries of *Venus*, ſhe ſoon recollected her ſelf, and with a forrowfull voice (as if ſhe had been ſick of a ſeaver for a fortnight together) ſhe pewled out theſe words: *Ah dear Husband* (ſaid ſhe) *I was lately taken with ſuch a great ſwimming in my head, as not able to ſit up longer, I was forced to go up ſtairs and lie down upon the bed; in the mean time I ſuppoſe your unhappy kinſman (who minds nothing but miſchief) hath in revenge of me for cauſing him to be beaten, locked the door, and thrown away the key.* Whileſt ſhe was thus exclaiming on me, I came in puffing and blowing as ſeeming quite orewearied with play, and as if ignorant of what had hapned, asked very earneſtly what was the matter? My Aunt though ſhe were mue'd up like a hawk, yet hearing my tongue, could not forbear to vend her ſpleen againſt me in theſe words: *You impudent young Rogue* (ſaid ſhe) *doe you act miſchief and then plead ignorance? O that I were but well for thy ſake, I would make every limb of thee feel the weight of my diſpleaſure*, concluding her invective with as horrid a yelling as an old woman grown hoarſ with crying of Sprats, or as a company of dogs when they bark at the Moon.

My Uncle who was of the ſame nature that other Cuckolds are commonly of, to believe whatſoever

their Wife doe ſay unto them, hearing her ſo poſitively to affirm it was I that did it, he began preſently to ranſack my pockets for the key, proteſting if he found the ſame about me, he would make me an example of his ſeverity. But I who always dreaded what might enſue, to prevent ſuch after claps, had before beſtowed the ſame in a houſe of office. No ſooner had my Uncle examined my pockets, (where was not any thing to be found that might do me a prejudice,) but I began to enveigh againſt my Aunts malice in blaming my innocency, and to perſwade him it could be no other then ſome thief, who whileſt my Aunt ſlept, having locked the door, had hid himſelf in one of the Chambers. This though it carried but little ſhow of probability in it, yet the fear of looſing his Mammon made him believe any thing, and therefore preſently ſent me for a Smith to break open the door, which being done, we all three aſcended the ſtairs to ſearch for his hidden Thief, although my Aunt vehemently urged the contrary, alleadging it was impoſſible that any one ſhould go up the ſtairs but ſhe muſt needs hear them ; how ever my uncle would not be ſo pacified, but ſearching about, he at laſt ſpyed the poor Shopkeeper as he lay ſhaking underneath the bed half dead with fear. But when he ſaw who it was, turning to my Aunt he ſaid, *You impudent whore, do you abuſe me thus? you could feign ſickneſs with a pox to you, when you were ſo rampant as to Cornute me in my abſence: is this your pretended chaſtity and reſervation? I ſhall take a time when to be even with you; In the meantime Maſter Shopkeeper* (ſaid he) *I will have my pennyworths out of you*, and

thereupon ſalling on him with his fiſts, (anger giving him at once both ſtrength and courage) he ſo buffeted the Shopkeeper, that had not the Smith interpoſed, I ſuppoſe he would go near to have killed him ; but after an hundred or above of blows, the Smith ſtepped in betwixt them, giving the Shopkeeper liberty to run away, bearing along with him the marks of my Uncles anger, which he wore as badges in his face for a long time after.

My Aunt ſeeing how bad the Shopkeeper had ſped, and knowing the buſineſs too apparent to be denied, fell down on her knees, deſiring my Uncle to pardon her for what was paſt, and proteſting amendment for the time to come ; this her humiliation much mollified the edge of my Uncles anger, who in ſtead of beating her (which I heartily wiſhed) fell a railing on the whole ſex of women in general, in theſe or the like words.

O Nature ! why didſt thou create ſuch a plague for men as women ; how happy were men had they never been ; oh why could not Nature inſuſe the giſt of procreation in men alone without the help of women? then ſhould we never be acquainted with the deceitful devices of thoſe Devils, Harpies, Cockatrices, the very Curſe of man, diſſembling monſters, only patcht up to cozen and gull men ; borrowing their Hair from one, Complexions from another, nothing of their own that's pleaſing, all diſſembled, not ſo much as their very breath is ſophiſticated with Amber pellets and kiſſing cauſes, and all to train poor man unto his ruine. A woman ſhee's an Angel at ten, a Saint at fifteen, a Devil at forty, and a Witch at fourſcore, ſo ſtufft with

vice as leaves no place for vertue to inhabit; of ſuch crooked conditions, and corrupt actions, that if all the world were paper, the Sea inke, trees and plants, penns, and all men Clerks, Scribes, and Notaries, yet would all that paper be ſcribled over, the inke waſted, penns worn to the ſtumps, and all the Scriveners weary, before they could deſcribe the hundredth part of a womans wickedneſs, ſo that I may very well conclude wlth the Poet.

There is not one good woman to be found;
And if one were, ſhe merits to be crown'd.

This my Uncles invective puts me in mind of a ſtory which I have heard ſince, concerning the ſcarcity of good women, that above five hundred years agone, there was a great ſicknefs almoſt throughout the whole world, wherein there dyed forty four millions, eight hundred ſeventy two thouſand, ſix hundred and eighty three good women, and of bad women only two hundred and fourteen; by reaſon whereof there hath been ſuch a ſcarcity of good women ever ſince, the whole breed of them being then almoſt utterly extinct.

CHAP. VIII.

His Aunt and the maid joyn together, and by a blinde wager make him to be laughed and hooted at by the boyes; he is ſoundly revenged on them both for the ſame.

NEver was Prentice more fubject to a Maſter then my Aunt was to my Uncle after the diſcovery of her leachery; his deſires were commands, and thoſe commands laws which were by her put in ſpeedy execution, if he bid her go, ſhe would run; doe that, it was no ſooner ſaid then done, but the greateſt miracle of all was, that if ſhe were never fo bufy in talking, yet if he faid but *peace*, ſhe would fuddenly hold her tounge, which before uſed to be in perpetual motion, and was as hard to be ſtopped as a ſtream when it hath overflowne its banks, or the fails of a mill when the wind blows in its greateſt violence, fo that a ſerene sky ſeemed to have fucceeded that ſtorm that all things were pacified, and that my Uncle had contentedly put his horns in his pocket.

But though ſhe carried fair weather in her countenance, ſhe had ſtorms of revenge in her heart towards me; for ſhe did more than conjecture that it was I which had cauſed her all this

mifchief; and therefore fince fhe durft not vend her fpleen upon me her felf, fhe ufed the help of her Maid, who brought the fame to pafs after this manner.

One evening (my uncle being abroad) whileft fhe, the maid and I were fitting alone by the fire, after fome other difcourfe, the maid profer'd to lay a wager with me that I could not blindfolded with my tongue lick forth a fix pence from betwixt her breafts, this I thought fo eafy a thing to do, that I willingly laid a fhilling with her on the fame, and prefently accorded for to be blinded: which whileft fhe was doing, my Aunt (as it was before agreed) ftepped forth of doors, and called in a Boy who was to act their defign, as alfo fome of the neighbours to be fpectators of this my folly. Now in ftead of the Maids breft, the Boyes Hofe were put down, and his naked breech expofed to be the object for me to lick, which I greedily perfued: but prefently hearing a gigling, and fenting a ranck fmell, I foon defifted, as being very apprehenfive what the matter was. But when I was unblinded, and beholding my fhame before my eyes, I hung down my head and look't like a dog that had ftole a pudding, much blaming my credulity, and bitterly curfing the great caufe of that their jollity.

For a long time after I could not walk the ftreets, I was fo laughed and hooted at by the Boyes, my Aunt and the Maid having fpread the fame abroad in every place, flefh and blood could not endure this, to fee my enemies triumph in my fhame, fo that nothing now ran in my mind but revenge, the very thought of mifchief was more fweet unto me than Mufcadine and Eggs, and foon I thought up-

on a way for to do it. One of our neighbours who beared a little love to my Aunt, as ſhe did to me, or loyalty to my Uncle, having a burning glafs, I imparted my project unto him, who applauding my invention, willingly lent me the ſame; thus fitted with an inſtrument, I foon found out an opportunity to work my revenge. My Aunt being extreamly proud, ufed to wear Lawn Ruffs of a great value. One Sun-ſhiney day, ſitting in the Shop a fowing with her back towards me, I took the burning-glafs, and by attracting the Sun-beams fet her Ruffs on a flame about her neck, which made her to ſhreik and bellow moſt hiddeouſly; whereupon I ſtarted up, and as if affrighted fnatched up a payl of dirty water away from the Maid wherewith ſhe was waſhing the Kitchin, and poured the fame on my Aunts head; this though it made her to look like a Bawd that was newly alighted from the Cart wherein ſhe had ridden for the ſin of leachery, did ſhe take as a great courteſie at my hands, having thereby extinguiſht the fire wherein otherwiſe ſhe might (ſhe ſaid) have periſht; not in the leaſt judging it was I that did it, but imputing it as a juſt Judgment upon her for her intollerable pride, and vowing thereafter to be more humble in her carriage, and loving unto me.

Now though I thought I had plenary fatisfaction for my abuſe, of my Aunt, yet I refolved that the maid ſhould in no caſe go fcotfree, but that her difgrace ſhould be equal to mine; Being thus refolved, I procur'd fome Emmets Eggs by the help of a Countryman; the nature of which are, that being taken, in broth poſſet, ale, or the like, they will fet the parties

on farting, as if they would break their very twatling ſtrings therewith. The very next day after I had gotten them, my Uncle had invited ſome Gueſts to dinner, wherefore I reſolved to put my reſolution in execution then. That morning the maid to ſtrengthen her the better to go through her work, had provided her ſelf a Caudle, ſhe being of the ſame nature that moſt women are of, to know very well what is good for themſelves, no ſooner was her back turned, but I conveyed the Eggs into the ſame, which ſhe very freely drank off, but preſently her Belly began to wamble, and her back-ſide proclaimed aloud that ſhe was very much troubled with winde; ſuch loud reports ſhe gave, and ſo faſt they came one after another, that the good wife in the Tale *of the Fryer and the Boy*, was a meer nothing to her. I could not forbear laughing if I ſhould have been hang'd to hear how faſt ſhe trumpt it about, which gave her occaſion to miſtruſt that I had done ſomething unto her; but when ſhe went to rail at me, her tongue could not be heard for the exceeding noiſe that ſhe made with her Tail. By this time my Aunt was come down off her Chamber, but hearing how the Maid talkt to her at both ends, ſhe could not forbear laughing neither, which vexed the Maid worſe than before. My Uncle hearing the great noiſe that was made, came alſo to ſee what was the matter, but *Jane* (for ſo was the Maids name) was ſo aſhamed that ſhe could not ſpeak one word for bluſhing, only that her Tail proclaimed that ſhe had a very great Civil War within her belly: poor *Jane* did all ſhe could to hold it in but it would not do, but out it flew with ſuch impetuoſity, that my

uncle could leſs forbear then we, but laughed as if he would have ſplit himſelf. This treble noiſe of laughter made *Jane* to think that we had all conſpired againſt her, wherefore ſhe got into her Chamber, and notwithſtanding dinner was to dreſs, yet locking the door, all the Rhetorick that could be uſed to her, could not prevail with her to quit her Chamber all that day.

Next morning (her body being now in a quiet temper) ſhe appeared out of her den, but who ſhould then have ſeen her looks might plainly perceive how anger and ſhame ſtrove which ſhould have moſt predominancy in her; at firſt her Clack began to go, but my Aunt pacifying her, ſhe fell to her work as ſhe was accuſtomed. Now over night I had ſo devulg'd it amongſt the Boyes, that when that forenoon ſhe was ſent to market, ſhe had not been far out of doors but ſhe had a hundred boyes at her heels, farting with their mouths, and making ſuch loud hoots and hollows, that ſhe was forced to return back again, where incloſing her ſelf within her Chamber till night, ſhe packt up her cloaths and in the duſk of the Evening departed away, whither I never ſaw her afterwards.

CHAP. IX.

Some abuſes of Chyrurgions; the knavery of Tapſters, Hoſtlers and Chamberlains, with a brief character of a drunken Hoſt.

HAving now attained to about twelve years of age, my uncle began to inſtruct me ſomewhat in his art of Chyrurgery, intending when I had attained ſome ſmall perfection therein, to ſend me to Sea, although my minde never ſtood that way, reſolving not to be mue'd up in a wooden Cage, where there was but ſome few inches diſtance continually betwixt me and death. In this ſmall tract of time that I was thus employed with my Uncle, I found out much cuningneſs in his art whereby to gain money, for if it were but a prickt finger, he would make a great matter of it, and tell you what danger you had been in if you had ſtaid but a minute longer; inſtancing how ſuch a one his Patient *by only cutting of a Corn, and drawing blood, it turned to a Gangreen, which by bad handling of unskilful Chyrurgions growing worſe and worſe, they were at laſt inforced to ſend for him, who in a few days made him perfectly ſound, that otherwiſe* (had he not come to him) *muſt inevitably have periſht.*

Now becauſe monyed Cuſtomers were ſomething rare, when they did come we made both their bodies and purſes ſmart for it; lengthening out the healing of their wounds, the better to wire-draw their purſes. Indeed we were not ſo much beholding to the Wars, as we were to the Stews, unleſs ſometimes a Tavern quarrel brought us a Patient; but then what a brave incitement we had to make him part with his mony, telling him he might recover that and ten times more of his Adverſary, that we would be witneſs for him, and that if he had not met with a skilful Chyrurgion, it would have coſt him his life; when as perhaps it was but a little ſcratch, his block-head being too hard for to receive any deep wound.

One ſtory of a Patient I ſhall relate, not ſo much to ſhow the rarity of his cure, but the malice of a woman which occaſioned his hurt.

The fellow by his profeſſion was a Plaiſterer, who had a moſt damnable ſcold to his wife, that uſed to fetch him from the Ale-houſe with a Horſe-pox; one night coming home three quarters drunk, ſhe acted the part of *Zantippe*, and make the Houſe to ring with her ſcolding; this muſick was ſo untunable in her husbands ears, that getting a Cudgel in his hands, he fell to be labouring her as Sea-men do ſtock-fiſh, until he made her to ask him forgiveneſs, and promiſe him never to ſcold ſo again: Having thus as he thought got an abſolute conqueſt over her tongue, he went quietly to Bed, where he ſlept ſoundly, whileſt ſhe lay awake ſtudying of miſchief. In the morning before he wak't ſhe examind his pockets for mony, the common tricks of a great many women; but found nothing in them

ſave only ſome lath-nails; theſe did ſhe take and ſet upright all about the Chamber, which done ſhe gets a pail of water in her hands, and calling aloud, commands him to riſe, which he refuſed to do, ſhe throws the pail of water upon the Bed; this ſo vext him that ſtarting ſuddenly up, he went to run aſter her, when his naked feet lighting upon the lath nails, he was ſorced to ſlacken his pace, being ſo mortified with them, that for three quarters of a year aſterwards he lay under my Uncle's hands.

But to return where I left. I had not been long at the Trade, when my Uncle one day walking down to *Wapping*, provided me of a maſter to go to Sea, which (as I told you before) I was fully reſolved againſt, and therefore very peremptorily I told him that I would not go, which ſo incenſed him that he vow'd that I ſhould not ſtay any longer in his houſe; I was the leſs troubled at his words becauſe the day before I had heard of a Tapſter in an Inn not far off that wanted a Boy; thither therefore went I and profferd my ſervice unto him, which he as readily accepted, and the ſame night was I entertained into the Houſe, he having heard the cauſe of my departure from my Uncle, for which he rather blamed him than me.

Now was I in my Kingdom having ſtore of company, and my fill of ſtrong drink, which two things I dearly loved. I applied my ſelf to my calling very diligently, and ſoon learned to cry *Anon, anon Sir*, and *By and by*, with as much alacrity as the beſt Tapſters Boy in Chriſtendom. My Maſter taught me how to nick the Canns,

and froth the Jugs, and with the crotched chalk to ſcore up two flaggons for one, and I quickly found the way, when Company was drinking to take away flaggons before they were half empty, and full tobacco-pipes amongſt the foul ones. When Company firſt came in, I always obſerv'd to bring them of the beſt liquor, but when they were half drunk, then that which run on Tilt, or the drappings of the tap ſhould ſerve their turn; if they found fault, I would take it away to change it, but neverthelefs they ſhould be ſure to pay for it, as if they had drunk it.

One thing I obſerved of my maſter, that if the Reckoning once came to above three ſhillings, he would be ſure to bring in ſix pence or eight pence more than it was; then when the Company were going away he would ſay, *Nay ſtay, Gentlemen, & take my half dozen Cans before you go*, which moſt commonly produced another reckoning, the Gentlemen not knowing how to retaliate his kindneſs without doing ſo, by this means getting their mony, with thanks to boot. If Gentlemen brought tobacco of their own, we would ſay it ſtunk were it never ſo good, and feigning a Cough as if half ſtifel'd, cry out, *Who is it that takes of this ſtinking ſtuff? this is enough to ſuffocate the Devil.* Which would make ſome Gentlemen to throw away their pipes and ſay, *Pox on this Grocer he hath cheated me damnably, come give us three pipes of your tobacco*, which when they have had they would commend for ſuperexcellent, although perhaps twelve pence in the pound worſe than his own, by which may be proved that tobacco is nothing elſe but a meer fancy.

I ſeeing my maſter cozen Gentlemen ſo frequently, thought with my ſelf that I might cozen them alſo, or at leaſt-wiſe cozen my maſter, who ſo often cozened others, being warranted thereto by that of the Poet.

Cozen the Cozener, commonly they be
Profain, let their own ſnare their ruine be.

And therefore when he was out of the way, to the reckoning I would add a groat, ſix pence, eight pence, or twelve pence, according as it was in bigneſs, which yet I would alſo ſcore up, leſt if he came in the way before it was paid, and ſhould tell the ſcore; I might be miſtruſted; but if I received the mony before he came, then the over-plus went into my own pocket, which could not be diſcovered when the chalk was wiped out.

In Summer, when people drank in Canns, if my Maſter were in company (as oft-times he was invited by Gueſts to drink with them) we had a Can with a falſe bottom that held not above a quarter of a pint, which in the delivery of them I always ſo ordered as that Can came to his hands, which he would drink off leiſurely, and then turning the bottom upwards, it paſt undiſcerned, ſaving thereby much beer in a day, keeping himſelf ſober to drink in other companies.

In Winter for morning-draughts we furniſhed our Gueſts with *Gravejend* toaſts, which is bread toaſted over night, our plenty of Gueſts not permitting us to do it in the morning; if we put any of them into drink before our Gueſts (as ſometimes we were forced to do) we would be ſure to warm the beer or ale before-hand, and in putting

in the toaſt cry ſiz, although it were as cold as a ſtone.

But my Maſter and I were not all the cozeners that belonged to the Inn, the Hoſtler claimed as great a ſhare in that miſtery as we. His chief cunning conſiſted in tallowing Horſe-teeth that they ſhould eat no hay; or when a Gentleman gave his Horſe oats, no ſooner was his back turn'd, but he would ſteal them half away, telling the Gentleman, *his Horſe muſt needs travel well he was ſo quick at his meat.* If a Gentleman's ſaddle were any thing torn he would be ſure to make it ſo bad that he could not ride any further with it without mending, as alſo to ſpoyle the ſhoes on the Horſes feet, that he muſt be forced to have new ones, for which he had penſions from the Smith and the Sadler.

Nor muſt I here forget the Chamberlain, who deſerved to be rancked with the foremoſt for Roguery; he was a ſly thief, and uſed to cheat Gueſts with foul ſheets, pretending them to be clean, when as they had been lain in three or four times; and then a little water ſtrowed on them, and foulded up and preſt, made them ſeem as if new waſht. He was a very diligent obſerver of Gentlemens Cloakbags, whether they had good ſilver linings in them or no, which if he found to be ponderous, his next care was to inquire what Country-men they were, which way they travelled, and the like, which having found, he gave intelligence accordingly to a Gang of Highway men, with whom he was in continual pay.

Theſe were the Servants that belonged to this Inn, ſuch a parcel of Canary-birds as well deſerved

to look through a Hempen Caſement at the three corner'd tenement in the high-way betwixt *London* and *Paddington.* Were not thoſe Gueſts well bleſt think ye, which hapned in ſuch a place where none but knaves, thieves, and cheaters were their attendants? Now you cannot but imagine that the Maſter of ſuch Servants was well worthy of his place, I ſhall therefore only give you a brief character of the Hoſt himſelf, and ſo proceed on in my diſcourſe.

He ſeemed by his bulk to be of the race of the old Gyants, and though his belly were not ſo big as the tun at *Heidleburg*, yet a flaggon of beer therein ſeemed no more than a man in *Pauls.* He commanded with as much imperiouſneſs as if he were the great *Cham* of *Tartaria*, and had an excellent faculty to ſtrut along the ſtreets with the top of his ſtaff bobbing againſt his lips, he could call the young wenches whores with a great grace; and when he took tobacco, his mouth vented ſmoak like the funnel of a Chimney. He much blamed the Engliſh for affecting to drink wine, preferring beer and ale before all forraign liquors whatſoever. To ſhow his loving nature he would drink with all companies, and would toſs off a *Cann* with celerity and dexterity. He would not be jealous though he ſaw another man kiſſing his wife, knowing ſuch her familiarity to be the greateſt Load-ſtone that attracted Gueſts to his houſe, in ſumme, his forenoons work was to ſcoope in beer by the Quart, and the moſt part of the afternoon to ſpend in ſleeping.

In this houſe I waſted away my time nigh three quarters of a year, but then a ſad accident befel

my Maſter, which left me again to ſhift for my ſelf; he had belike been dabling in private with *Prudence*, one of the maids belonging to the houſe, I know not what the buſineſs was, but ſhe looked ſo bigly on him that he could not endure her ſight, and therefore to avoid it, he privately put off his Cellar to another, and having received his money, marched off *incognito*, leaving me to the wide world; for this new Tapſter having a boy of his own, diſmiſſed me to ſhift for my ſelf.

CHAP. X.

The cheats of Cookes, a ſtory of the Spirit in the Buttery, he ſteals a ſilver Bowl, the Cozenages of Aſtrologers; the death of his Father being killed in a drunken brangling.

LOng I was not without a Maſter, being entertayned into a Cooks ſervice, of which I rejoyced not a little, being in good hope however the world went, that I ſhould not be ſtarved in a Cookes ſhop, one extraordinary priviledge I had by living in this ſervice; for if the old proverb be true, *that the nearer the bone, the ſweeter the fleſh*, then I always ate of the ſweeteſt, my diet being to pick the bones that came off of Gentlemens Tables. During the time that I lived here, although I had been a young wench, I ſhould not needed to have feared being troubled with the Green-ſickneſs, running up and down ſtairs ſo many ſcore times in a day would have cured me of that malady; thoſe who had ſeen my nimbleneſs would have abſolutely judged that my ſhooes were made of cork, I was as light heel'd as ſhe who hath made her Husband Cuckold ſeven and twenty times over. My Maſter drave

a great trade, not onely in boil'd meat and roaſt meat, but alſo in baking ſmall pies, which the women cryed up and down the ſtreets for him. Every Friday I obſerved we had brought in a Porters basket full or two of pieces of raw meat, which though me thought they ſmelt very unſavory, yet were they made uſe of, ſome minced, others pepper'd and ſalted, and put into pies, ere the week went about they all marcht off, I wondered for a great while from whence this meat came, at laſt I was inſormed by one of the Prentices, that it was ſuch pieces as were cut off of the ſtinking raw hides, that were brought into *Leaden-hall* to ſell there on Fridays; bleſs me thought I, what deceit is here! then did I think on the old Proverb, *that the blind eats many a fly*. No marvel that ſickneſſes are ſo riſe, ſince ſuch unwholſome food muſt needs introduce them. Now becauſe thoſe pieces of meat were lean and dry, they uſed to mix with them ſuch fat pieces of meat as Gentlemen leſt, adding thereto ſome dripping, and ſuch like ſtuff, which altogether made a gallant hodg-podg for hungry ſtomacks.

To roaſt meat twice over is ſo commonly now uſed amongſt moſt Cooks, that I think I ſhall not need to mention this as a rarity in my Maſter; and yet would not that, nor what I mentioned before, nor his buying of Carrion, ſuch meat as would have dyed alone had it not been killed, being diſeaſed or maimed, and ſelling it for good; all this (I ſay) would not do, notwithſtanding all his great pains, but ſtill he went backwards in the world; which puts me in mind of a ſtory that I have heard ſome while ago, concerning an

evil ſpirit that haunts the houſes of ſuch perſons who uſe unconſcionable wayes whereby to grow rich, which though it be nothing as concerning my life, yet I think it not amiſs to relate the ſame, as being not altogether impertinent to our purpoſe.

In the City of *Briſtol* (a place which may compare with the choiceſt of *England* for the ſairneſs of the buildings, and richneſs of trading) within the memory of our Fathers, there lived a young man named *Franciſco*, who although prentice to a Baker, yet when his time came out, ſet up the trade of a Cook. This young man was very deſirous to gain a great eſtate quickly, and ſo impatient he was of being rich on a ſudden, that he reſolved to leave no means unattempted which ſhould lye in his way whereby he might effect his deſire, for ſo he might gain, he ſtood not upon what means whereby he might doe it; bad infected meat he ſold for good, nickt his Canns, froatht his Jugs, ſcored up two flaggons for one, yea what not? but all his endeavours arrived not to that height which he expected, for notwithſtanding he went forward in trading, doe what he could he went backwards in thriving. This *Franciſco* had a Prieſt to his Uncle, that lived about ſome twenty miles off him, who had beſtowed ſome ſmall matter on him when his time came out whereby to ſet him up, and two years being now expired, he repaired to his Nephew to ſee how fortune had favor'd him, and whether he had made any improvement of that little he had given him. The Nephew entertained him kindly, and feaſted him royally, but when his Uncle asked him how the world went

with him, he could not chuſe but ſigh, telling him what endeavours he had uſed whereby to encreaſe his eſtate, but that all proved fruitleſs. Ah Cozen (ſaid the old man) come along with me, and I will ſhow you the thief that ſteals away all your gains, and thereupon taking him by the hand he lead him into the Cellar, where when they were come, they beheld a big fellow with a paunch like a tun, his eyes ſtrutting out with fatneſs, his thighes like to mill-poſts, ſo unweildy that he could hardly go; there they ſaw him gurmandizing on the cold meat that was left, devouring more in a minute then ſix hungry plough-men could doe in half an hour; after he had ſo eaten, he takes a flaggon in his hand, and of the beſt beer, ſwallows down five or ſix of them full one after another, which being done he vaniſht away; this Couſin (ſaid the Prieſt) is *the Spirit of the Buttery*, who ſo long as you uſe unconſcionable wayes by cheating of people, hath power over what you have, which he will ſo inviſibly devour, that do what you can for the gaining of an eſtate, it is but all in vain; and therefore if you intend to thrive, you muſt take a clean contrary courſe to what you have done, and by dealing honeſtly, there is no queſtion but a bleſſing will follow upon your endeavours.

The young man promiſed very faithfully to do according to his Uncles directions, who thereupon returned home again: accordingly when his Uncle was gone, he began to work a thorow reformation, bought of the beſt meat, ſold good pennyworths, filled his flaggons, ſcored right, and dealt juſtly in all his acting, doing this, he quickly begins to thrive in the world, grows rich, purchaſes

houſe and land, and hath a great ſtock by him beſides; in ſo much that his wealth being taken notice of, he was ſoon after choſen one of the Aldermen of the City. His Uncle afterwards comes again to viſit him, to whom he relates his change of condition, and how God had bleſſed him with a plentifull eſtate. Now Couſin (ſaid the old Prieſt) let us again viſit your Cellar; when they came there, they beheld a thin, lean, meager fac'd fellow, one that ſeemed more like an Anatomy than a man; his ribs appeared through his cloaths, his eyes were ſunck into his head, his cheeks look'd like to ſhriveld parchment, and his legs (which were no bigger than cat-ſticks that boys uſe at trap-ball) were ſo weak as would hardly ſupport his body. He went to a platter of cold meat, but had not ſtrength enough to lift it up to his head; afterwards he aſſayed to draw ſome beer, but could not pull the tap out of the faſſet, ſo that ſeeing his endeavours were in vain, with a deep ſigh he vaniſht away. Now Nephew (ſaid the old Prieſt) you may plainly perceive what it was that hinder'd you from thriving before and therefore now ſince you are thoroughly inſtructed whereby to be rich, I ſhall take my leave of you, wiſhing with all my heart that all of your profeſſion would leave off their cheating and couzening tricks, and take the ſame courſe of life whereby to thrive as you have done.

Now, ſaid he, what think you of this diſcourſe? is this quiet beſides the matter or no? in truth (quoth I), I think it is very pertinent to the purpoſe, and I wiſh all tradeſmen would follow the example, for when they have done all they can,

they will finde in the end that honeſty is the beſt policy, and to deal juſtly the high-way to grow rich: the beſt bed-fellow to ſleep with is a good conſcience, and well doing (were there no reward for it in the world to come) yet were it a ſufficient recompence in it ſelf. But leaving this diſcourſe, as that which is rather to be wiſhed for, than aſcertained to be practiſed in this evil age of ours: let me entreat you to proceed on in the diſcourſe of your life, as a thing which I much deſire to hear.

That ſhall I gladly do, ſaid he. Know then that after I had been at this Cooks ſome ſmall ſpace of time, my Father returned home from being a Soldier, in that voyage he was preſt out as I told you of before; now though he did not go out full, he returned home more empty than he went out; without cloaths, and without money to buy any; and which was worſt ſo pinched with hunger, that he looked like a ſcare-crow, or one newly riſen from the dead. It grieved my heart to ſee him in this condition, but how to remedy it I did not know; ſome little money I had which was left of that I ſnipt in the Tapſters ſervice, which I very freely beſtowed upon him, but alas that was gone as ſoon almoſt as received, and I having no more to ſupply him, he asked me if we had no plate, that went about the houſe? I told him we had; then (ſaid he) to furniſh me, you muſt at ſuch time as your houſe is full of Gueſts, upon their going away convey a ſilver bowl into a ſecure place, which you may afterwards deliver for me to one whom I will ſend for that purpoſe, for I will not come to your houſe my ſelf, becauſe there ſhall be no ſuſpition of me; I pro-

miſed him to do as he bid me, appointing him the time when he ſhould ſend the man, which was the next day; accordingly he came and I deliver'd him a large ſilver bowl, which he carried cleverly away. At night when my Maſter came to lock up his plate, the beſt bowl was miſſing, which put all the houſe into diſorder; my Maſter ſwore, my Miſtreſs ſcolded, the Servants grumbled, but who to blame not any one could tell; onely the maid ſaid ſhe ſaw it in my hand that afternoon, for which I wiſht her tongue in a cleft ſtick, but ſtoutly denyed that I had ſeen it that day: indeed my Maſter had a great conceit of my honeſty or elſe her bawling might have diſcover'd me, for had they charg'd me with it ſtrongly, I ſhould not have had the impudence to have ſtood out in the denyal of it, having that within me which ſtrongly checked me for doing it. But after ſome ſmall inquiſition about it, it was generally agreed that ſome of the Gueſts had ſtollen it away; then next was inquiry made what ſeveral companies we had that day, and which of them was the moſt to be ſuſpected; but the more they thought, the worſe they were ſatisfied, not one appearing more probable than another; wherefore it was agreed by a general conſent, that the next morning the Maid and I ſhould go to a cunning *Aſtrologer* about it, one who was cryed up for art to be little inferior to *Fryer Bacon*, for though he could not make a brazenhead to ſpeak, yet he had ſuch a brazen face of his own, as could out-face the Devil himſelf for lying.

I was not afraid to go, though I knew my own guilt, becauſe I always judged that Art to be a meer cheat, and though they lay their nets very

plauſibly to take the people; yet they ſeldome catch any but owls and wood-cocks. Knocking at the door, Maſter *Aſtrologer* came out unto us, ſo wrapped up in his Purple Gown, that you could ſcarcely ſee e'r an honeſt limb of him; he had on his head a black cap with a white one under it, which was turned up ſome part over the black one, that it looked like a black Jack tipt with ſilver. After we had diſcovered our buſineſs unto him, he told us the price of his art was a ſhilling whether he found out the thief or no; we knew it was in vain for us to contend with him, and therefore we very freely gave it him, by which he perceived that the ſtars were very auſpitious to him in that hour, or elſe (for ought I know) he might have gone without his mornings-draught. When he had received our money he very formally ſet himſelf down in a Chair, having a peice of white paper before him, and then taking a pen in his hand, he made thereon ſeveral Triangles and Quadrangles, with other Crotchets and Whimſies, which he called the twelve Houſes. Jupiter *ſaid he being Lord of the Aſcendent, ſignifies good luck for the gaining your Cup again, did not* Mars *interpoſe with an evil aſpect towards* Mercury. *Now* Venus *being on the fiery Trigon, denotes the party that had it lives either Eaſt or Weſt; and* Saturn *being Retrograde, and in the Cuſp of* Taurus, *it muſt needs be that it is hidden under ground either North or South.* Then asked he us if there were not a red hair'd man there that day? we told him no, nor a black hair'd man neither ſaid he? we ſtill anſwer'd no; nor was there not (ſaid he) a brown hair'd man there, with grey Cloaths, not very tall, nor very low?

we told him yes; then asked he us if we knew him or no? we anſwered no. *The* Sun *ſaith he being ill poſited in the eleventh Houſe, and* Mercury *in Trine with* Virgo *it was without all doubt a brown hair'd man that had your bowl.* Then asked I him if it might not be a woman as well as a man? this put him ſomething to his trumps; but when the Maid ſaid that could not be, for there was never a ſtrange woman there all that day, he grew bold and anſwer'd, no; *for* Venus ſaid he *being weak in reception with* Gemini, *and the* Moon *in her detriment, both Feminine Planets, does plainly tell that it was a man, and one betwixt forty and fifty years of age.* Upon my life ſaid the Maid, I ſaw the party that had it, he was a curld pated fellow, with a whitiſh Cloak and a ſad coloured ſuit, about thirty years of age, he dined in the half Moon, and had ſix penny worth of roaſt beef to his dinner; but if ever I ſee the Rogue agen, ile teach him to ſteal bowls with a murrain to him. I could not chuſe but laugh to my ſelf at the wenches confidence, and the cheat of the Aſtrologer, and to think how poor ſilly people are cozened by theſe Jugling Artiſts, for no better term can I give them, as believing no truth at all in their prædictions; for let me ask them this queſtion, whether the Stars do compel or only encline? if they ſay they compel, they ſpeak little leſs than blaſphemy, by aſcribing too much to Nature, and derogating from the Deity. If they only encline, then what ſure ground-work can there be for what they ſay, when their conjectures are but only probable? And for their Doctrine of nativities, that if a man be born under ſuch a Planet, his deſtiny will be ſo and ſo, and

he will come to ſuch an end; we ſee oft-times that in a battel, a Canon bullet kills five or ſix at one inſtant, who no doubt were born under ſeveral Planets, and yet come all to one fate; or if they ſay it is poſſible ſo many might be born under one and the ſelf ſame Planet and aſpects; yet let me go further with them; we have known battels at Sea, when by an unhappy ſhot a Ship hath ſunk in an inſtant, with ſix or ſeven hundred men in her, who have all been drowned in the deep. Will they ſay theſe were all born under one Planet? verily if they ſhould ſo ſay, I ſhould not believe them; therefore I may ſay of our Aſtrologers as Cato ſaid of the *Aruſpices of Rome* in his time, that *he wondred how one of them could forbear to laugh, when he met with any of his fellows, to ſee how they deceived men, and made a great number of ſimple ones in the City.* But I tire your patience with this digreſſion, for I expect not my words will work any Reformation in them, ſeeing they may ſay with *Demetrius* in the Acts of the Apoſtles, *that by this Craft they get their wealth.*

To return therefore where we left, having taken leave of the Aſtrologer, away we went home agen, fraught with a Sackful of news to tell our Maſter. No ſooner were we within doors, but the Maid ſet her clack agoing; *Maſter* (ſaid ſhe) *the Cunning man hath told us exactly who it was that ſtole your bowl, he hath deſcribed him fully from top to toe, not ſo much as his very ſhooſtrings but he told us of what colour they were of, his hat, his hair, his beard, his doublet, breaches, hoſe, not one thing that he omitted. I ſerved the Rogue that ſtole it with Roaſt-beef my ſelf, the Devil*

choak him with it, for I think ſilver will not; but if ever he comes here again, or that I meet him in the ſtreets, ile ſerve him ſuch a trick as ſhall make him wiſh he had never drank out of any thing in his life but a wooden diſh. I faid nothing all this while, and though I knew ſhe lied moſt abominably in what the Aſtrologer faid, yet I confirmed her ſpeeches, hoping this would forever take away fufpition from me of being culpable, only I thought with my felf if that party ſhe imagined to have it ſhould come again to the Houſe, what a coil ſhe would make with him; but whether ſhe forgot his Phyſiognomy, or that the man never came there agen, I never after that heard any more of the matter.

In the mean time my father had difpofed of the purchafed prize, bought him an old fuit with fome part of the mony, and ranted it in the ale-houſe with the reſt of it, for what is thus gotten over the Devils back is for the moſt part ſpent under his belly. At laſt his ſinful life had a Tragical concluſion, for one of his Comrades and he being fudling together, they chanced to fall out, and from words proceeded to blows, where my father recieved fuch a knock on his pate with a flaggon, that though it killed him not out-right, yet he furvived not long after; making his end anfwerable to his life: for as he led a troublefome life all the dayes he lived, fo he put the Pariſh to fome trouble at his death, who were forced to be at the charge of burying him.

CHAP. XI.

The abuſes of Nurſes, and keepers of ſick people, his Maſter dyeth, the knavery of his Executor both in his trade and office: he lives with a Lock-ſmith, the knavery of that trade.

I Was the leſs grieved for the death of my father, knowing, if he had lived, he would have brought me to the Gallows, for he would have been always in want, and urging me to ſupply him, which I could not do any other wayes than by theft; but that now he was dead I reſolved quite to give over the practice of it, for fear in the end, it ſhould bring me to look through a hempen caſement. And now I bent all my endeavours to pleaſe my Maſter, knowing I had few friends to rely upon; I was up with the firſt, and down with the laſt, and refuſed no work I was ſet unto, and I found the benefit of my diligence at laſt, for it pleaſed God to viſit our family with the Peſtilence, which in a weeks ſpace, ſwept away all the whole Houſhold but my Maſter and I. In this weeks time I obſerved the abuſes and cheats of Nurſes and Keepers, ſuch who look to people who are viſited with the ſicknes. Two of theſe Jades we had in our houſe,

who when my miſtris lay diſtracted with the diſtemper, took away her keys, and ranſackt her Trunks, from whence they took a purſe full of money, moſt of it gold, which ſhe had gathered unknown to my Maſter, intending to keep it for her further need, (or as we ſay) againſt a rainy day. Thus theſe Jades convey'd away together with a great deal of the beſt linnen in the houſe, which was done by the help of the watch-man that guarded the door, who was ſon-in-law to one of the Queans, and now that my Maſter might not diſcover their theft, they ſent her of an errant to her long home, by giving her drinks and other ſlops, quite contrary to what the Phyſicians preſcribed, by the ſame way they diſpatch'd the maid, and the Prentices, with a little Girle, the only Child my Maſter had; and now was none remaining but my Maſter and I, whom they intended ſhould have followed after the reſt, then they might have plundered without controul; but I ſeeing how ſoon my fellows were gone, and obſerving that they all dy'd preſently after they had received any of their ſlops, would have nothing to do with them, perſwading my Maſter to do the like, affirming it even before their faces, that they were the perſons that had kill'd my Miſtriſs and the reſt, and would if let alone, make a hand of us too. But theſe impudent Jades hearing me begin to diſcover their villanies, would have perſwaded my Maſter that I was alſo infected, and that it had already taken my brain, which cauſed me to talk ſo idly, and ſo began to ſeize upon me, intending to have ty'd me into a bed, which if they had done I ſhould never have come out of it alive, but my Maſter

interpoſing bid them let me alone, for he himſelf was of the ſame mind with me. Theſe bold Queans hearing him ſay ſo, one of them flew at him; you old dotard ſaid ſhe, do you begin to talke idely too, we muſt tame you yfaith, & ſo attempted to pull him down, whilſt the other was as buſie with me: my Maſter and I ſtrugling with them what we could: but perceiving them to be too hard for us (for they were two ſtout Maſtiff Queans) we got to the window and cryed as loud as we could, and thereby gathered a great many people together to know what was the matter, to whom we related the great danger we were in of being murdered by the two women that were with us, deſiring by all means, that we might be rid of them, they being the greateſt plague we were infected withal at the preſent, and whom we dreaded as much as death it ſelf; Amongſt others that came (alarm'd by this outcry) was a Shoomaker that lived not far off who was near of kin to my Maſter, and thought himſelf no mean fellow, he being at that time Overſeer of the poor, this man kept a great buſtle, commanding the door to be broken open, which being done with as much imperiouſneſs as a Countrey Juſtice domineers over a hedge-breaker, he commands the two women to depart out of the houſe, which they (being conſcious of a ſelf guilt) accordingly did, to the no little joy of my Maſter and me, who fear'd we ſhould have periſhed under their mercileſs hands.

Being rid of theſe two Harpyes, I was more than double diligent towards my Maſter, well hopeing that Death with his beeſom would ſweep him away

alſo, which I judged the rather could come to paſs, becauſe the thred of his life was ſpun out to a far greater length than mine, not at all conſidering, that the Peſtilence makes no difference betwixt age and youth; or if it doth, ſooner ſeizes upon youth than age, as having more matter to work upon. But I was ſo confident that my Maſter would die, and that I ſhould live, that I would rather perform all offices towards him, than to admit of a partner to plunder the Houſe with me when he was dead. But three dayes being paſſed, and no alteration at all appearing in him, I began then to alter my opinion, and feared he would eſcape and not have it at all; and therefore I began to caſt my wits about, and conſider with my ſelf, what I had beſt to do; now I knew conceit would do much with him, and therefore I firſt begun to tell him, that he looked very ill all of a ſudden, asking if he felt no alteration in his body? which at firſt he ſaid, no; but afterwards upon my perſwaſions that he muſt needs be ſick, he ſoon grew conceited that he was ſo indeed, in ſo much, that at laſt I told him, that he had the perfect ſymptoms of a dying man upon him; thoſe words ſtruck him to the very heart, that without further delay he went to the window, called for a Porter, and ſent him for a Shoomaker I ſpake of before, to come to him preſently, and bring a Scrivener along with him. I asked him what he would do with a Scrivener? but when he told me it was to make his will, I was ready to ſwound, fearing he would take an inventory of his goods alſo, and ſo hinder my pelfering when he was dead, for I was now fully

minded to theive from him what I could, notwithſtanding my reſolution but a little before to leave it off, I feared to be known for ſtealing the ſilver bowl: ſo hard it is for thoſe that are principled in wickednefs, to leave off that vice they have been accuſtomed unto; however I praiſed him for his care therein, that he would ſettle his mind as to outward affairs, they might be no hindrance to his more pious thoughts, which now ſhould be bent altogether to Heaven-wards.

Scarce had I made an end of praiſing his good intentions, but that the Shoomaker and the Scrivener were come, to whom out of the window, he declared his mind for the diſpoſing of his eſtate. Firſt, he commended his Soul unto Heaven, and his Body to Earth, which I wiſhed had been racked up in it before the Scrivener came. Next (ſaid he) for the good and faithful ſervice he hath done me, I bequeath to my Boy *Gregory* (for that is my name) the ſum of twenty pounds, whereof ten pound to be beſtowed on him in Schooling, the other ten pound to buy him Cloathes, and put him out to Apprentice to ſome Handy-craft Trade. I hearing my Maſter to ſay this, could not but reflect upon my monſtrous ingratitude that I ſhould go to kill him that was ſo kind to me, and had ſo much care for my future livelihood; but covetouſnefs cancels all obligations, and therefore is well termed the Spring head of all ungodlinefs. Next (ſaid he) I bequeath to the poor of the Pariſh wherein I live, the ſum of five pounds, three pound thereof to be laid out on Cloaths for them, to make them apparel, and beſtowed on ſuch as my Executor ſhall ſee moſt needful; and the other

forty ſhillings to be laid out in bread for them, and to be diſtributed the next four Sundayes after my deceaſe, each Sunday alike till it be out. The reſt of his eſtate he gave unto the Shoomaker. whom he made his full and ſole Executor, giving him a great charge to be careful of me, and ſo having ſubſcribed and ſealed it, he betook him to his bed, as prepared to die; and free leave he had to go both of me and the Shoomaker alſo.

To haſten him on the more, I perſwaded him to ſweat, which he was willing to do; ſo I covered him with as many Clothes as he was able to bear, and being in a violent ſweat, he called for ſome ſtrong waters; whereupon I went to the Pump and filled him a pint of ſuch ſober liquor as that yielded, and brought it to him; which having taſted, he asked me what I had brought him? I told him it was excellent good *white anny-ſeed*, he ſaid, it taſted like fair water; I told him, that was only the badneſs of his Pallet which could not diſtinguiſh any thing; truly (ſaid he) it taſteth ſo ſmall, that I think you may leave the word *anny ſeed* out, and call it only *white-water*. Yet notwithſtanding this he found ſuch fault, his parching thirſt cauſed him to drink it all off, which gave ſuch a ſudden chill to his blood, that what with that and ſome other ſlops that I gave him, in three days time he turned up his heels and dyed.

No ſooner was his breath out of his body, but I began to put in execution what before I had intended; and firſt I examined his pockets, wherein I found the ſum of fourteen ſhillings and nine pence; eleven ſhillings whereof I took, leaving ſome, that I might not be ſuſpected to have taken

any, but this was nothing to what I thought to find in his Trunck, which I opened with an expectation to have mine eyes bleſt with the ſight of ſtore of white and yellow pieces, but the clouds dropped no ſuch rain, the Trunk courted not me as *Jupiter* did *Diana* with a golden ſhowre; ſome plate was in it, ſome Bonds and other writings, but no money. This was a ſhrew'd cooling card to my high hopes, which promiſed me Mountains, and performed not mole-hills; for as for the plate the Executor knew of each piece in the houſe, and Bills and Bonds ſignified no more to me, than meat to an hungry man which he might ſee but not come at; wherefore ſeeing it would be no better, I armed my ſelf with patience, conſidering I had not loſt by his death, he having given me twenty pound for the bringing me up to ſome learning and putting me out Apprentice, by which I hoped to be ſufficiently able to live in the World; and therefore having ſecured the eleven ſhillings in the Coller of my doublet (miſtruſting my pockets might be ſearched) I called for a meſſenger, and ſent the Executor word of his death, not bidding him to have a care of frighting him in the delivery of his meſſage, for I did not think the ſudden news of his death would make him to break his heart with ſorrow, there was leſs fear in that, than of a Uſurer undoing a young Heir, when he once gets him into bonds. He having received the news, made no long tarriance before he came to me, bringing a couple of old women along with him to ſearch the dead corps, that an account might be given what he dyed of, which is a thing

that (you know) is uſual. But beſore I proceed any ſurther (having occaſion here to ſpeak of theſe ſearchers) give me leave to mention ſome abuſes and cheats which I have obſerved to be practiſed by them.

They are indeed very neceſſary, eſpecially in great Cities, that an account may be given of what diſeaſes people die of, and that men may not have their lives ſhortned by violence, which appearing after their deaths, may be by them diſcovered; but theſe women have their *Cheats* too, for notwithſtanding they are ſworn to give a true information to the Pariſh Clarks, yet money can ſo blind their eyes, that if a man be poyſoned, they can bring it in that he died of the *French-Pox*; and though a houſe be viſited with the ſicknefs, yet if the Maſter thereof be unwilling to be ſhut up for looſing his trading, if he do but greaze them in the fiſt with ſome money, they will make the Peſtilence to be ſurſeit, and the ſpotted ſeaver (which is little inferiour to the Plague) the Swine-pox, and ſometimes the Meazles; nay once I know two of theſe Searchers that for money brought it in that the party who had the ſpotted ſeaver, dyed of nothing elſe but the tooth-ach: Thus you ſee that it is an undeniable maxime, that there is *Knavery in all trades*, people being now grown ſo villanous in their practiſes, that they make the very dead to be acceſſary to their Cheats.

But to return to my ſtory: The Shoomaker ſtanding in the ſtreet, whileſt the women came in, called to me, and bid me, if any of the Truncks were open, to lock them up, and throw the keys

down to him; which I accordingly did, the fear of looſing his Mammon making him to diſpence with any danger that might accrew to him by taking the keys. That night was my old Maſter buried, and a fortnight after (the Bedding and Cloathes being aired in the mean time, and I continuing found) I was removed to his houſe, where I took ſpecial notice of his great care in performing my Maſters will, and firſt for the three pounds that was given to buy the poor Cloathes, he beſtowed the ſame on two ſuits for his own Boys, proving it to be the will of the dead it ſhould be ſo; for (ſaid he) they are poor who are in want, and his ſons wanting Clothes, therefore they were to be reckoned in the number of the poor, and policy bids us this, always to provide for our own poor firſt. Then for the bread he ordered with the Baker ſo, that for every ten dozen, he would have a twelve penny loaf and yet were they made fifteen to the dozen, which over-plus above twelve he alſo took to himſelf, ſo that the penny loaves ſhrunk to the bigneſs of half penny ones, and only for the name there was no difference. I ſeeing how he had dealt by the poor, thought with my ſelf that my Legacy would ſhrink alſo like Northern Cloath in the wetting, and my twenty pound, come to twenty ſhillings; but whilſt I had cauſe for my ſelf, I would not complain of his dealing by others, and therefore expected the event with patience.

Soon after I was ſet to School with a fellow that went in black Cloathes, and therefore taken for a man of learning becauſe ſo habited; this man and his Schollars were both of one mind,

for he cared not how little he taught them for their money, and they cared not how little they learned for it; but I who had no friends to rely on for beſtowing any thing upon me afterwards, reſolved not to neglect opportunity, but to gain what learning I could, thinking it might ſtand me in great ſtead another day, and therefore I ſo plyed my book, that in a ſhort time I could read Engliſh very perfectly, and had ſome skill in writing and caſting accounts.

During this time that I went to School, I plyed not my book ſo altogether, but that I obſerved ſome practices of the Shoomaker, both in his trade and in his office; and firſt for his trade, I ſaw he uſed two ſorts of leather, one whereof was called mens leather, which was ſtrong, faſt, and would laſt well; the other he called womans leather, which was not half tanned, and would ſcarce laſt ten miles going; this laſt ſort of leather (becauſe it was cheap) he uſed moſt, eſpecially in womens ſhooes, and the inner ſoals of mens: and ſometimes I obſerved that if the inner ſoals were too little, he would ſlit them in the middle to make them appear on both ſides, and at other times with his teeth he would ſtretch his leather, as for gain he would ſtretch his Conſcience. Then for his office, for the bread that was given to the poor at the Church on Sundayes, he had a weekly fee from the Baker for his cuſtom; and for other gifts that were to be diſtributed (as there was ſome Quarterly) that poor man that received them, muſt either do a dayes work gratis for him, or elſe preſent him with ſome gift worth half of what he was to re-

ceive, or elſe he was ſure to go without it; ſo that in reſpect of his office, theſe verſes of *Withers* were very applicable unto him,

The poor's neglector, O I pardon crave,
Collector I ſhould ſay, may play the knave,
The fool I would have ſaid, but chuſe you whether
He may be both, and ſo he may be neither.

But before I had been at School long, my Guardian told me, the ten pound was out for my board (for I paid a Roaſt-meat price for my diet, although I fed moſt commonly on bread and cheeſe) and therefore I muſt prepare to go to Prentice; I thought it was in vain to contend with him, and therefore bid him provide me a Maſter as ſoon as he would, for I was willing I told him to go. He quickly heard of one (for bad Maſters are as eaſie to be found as bad ſervants) one that was a true *Bacchanalian*, a Son of *Vulcan*, by profeſſion a Lock-ſmith, what the Executor was to give with me I know not, but thither I went ſome few dayes upon liking; and indeed it was but a few dayes I was there in all, for there was found *Knavery in that Trade* as well as others. My new Maſter had belike driven an old trade with pick-pockets, houſe-breakers, and ſuch kinde of people whom he furniſhed with ſtore of pick-locks, and inſtruments to break open Shop-doors and windows; he alſo drave a great trade with thieviſh Prentices, for falſe keys for their Maſters counting-houſes and Truncks, they bringing him the print of them either in Wax or Clay, with ſome of which he was ſharers in their purchaſe. He had alſo his

Emiſſaries abroad, which would ſteal Iron bars from Cellar-windows, and ſometimes fetch a ſhort jaunt into the Countrey, and ſteal the Coulters and Shares from the Ploughs, as alſo hooks and hinges from Gates, which he bought for a ſmall price, and uſed to work them out in the night for fear of diſcovery, yet all would not do, wicked actions have bad endings; one of theſe Prentices who had made uſe of him, and thereby much wronged his Maſter, ſpending that money riotouſly which he had got naughtily, his exceſs brought him to a ſurfeit that occaſioned his end, when upon his death-bed, reflecting on his former vitious practiſes, he detected my Maſter, who was thereupon apprehended and carried before a Juſtice of the Peace, that ſent him to *Newgate;* how he ſped I know not, but if he had his deſerts, I am ſure he could not ſcape hanging.

CHAP. XII.

He is bound Prentice to a Taylor, the Knavery of that trade, his Maſter of a ſtitch, he is turn'd over to a Baker, who miſuſing him he runeth away.

MY next Maſter forſooth was a Taylor, a dapper fellow, to whom the Shoomaker (becauſe he would be ſure to be rid of me) bound me Prentice the firſt day I went to him, after I had been there a little while, whether it be the nature of the trade, or what it was I know not, but all my mind ran upon penny-loaves and pudding-pies; & whereas before I was more given to drink than to eat, now my whole appetite was for feeding. If I went by a Bakers ſhop, oh how would I caſt mine eyes upon the penny loaves, wiſhing my belly a Cupboard to contain ſuch precious jewels; neither could it ſink into my faith, that there was any trade in the world comparable to a Bakers, but that which made me the more hungry, I conceive was that we were much pinched in our diet; for my Maſter made us obſerve more faſting days, then were ſet down in the Kallender, and then with a counterfeit zeal he would preach a long Lecture of ſobriety unto his Prentices, not that he had any Religion in him (for at another mans table

he would gurmandize like an Epicure) but to fave victuals; and when we fell ſhort at meals (as we oftentimes did) he would put us off with an old Proverb, that *many a ſack is tied up before it be full*, for his other qualifications and endowments, take a brief view in this ſhort but true character of him.

He was ſuch another as Sir *Thomas Overbury* ſpeaks of, a creature made up of ſhreds that were pared off from *Adam* when he was rough caſt. His chiefeſt care was, how to cloath other mens backs, and feed his own belly; how to make them fine, and himſelf fat, againſt Chriſtmas, Eaſter, or Whitſuntide; he was a man of ſome repute, but moſt time elſe like a thick Cloak in Summer, hang'd behind the door. His offenſive and defenſive weapons, were only a needle and a thimble; with the firſt he murdered many *Egyptian* vermine, and the laſt he made a Gauntlet for the top of his middle finger, which at other times jingling in his pocket with his bodkin, made the Ale-wife to think he had mony in his pocket, which cauſed oft-times a flagon to be ſcored up behind the door. His chief upholder was the ſin of pride, a new faſhion being to him like the Term to a Lawyer; to gain which he uſed to frequent thoſe Churches and places where Gallants moſt reſorted, when on a ſudden the Mechanicks wiſes and kitchen maids gowns came trowling in to be new altered, for *out of the faſhion, out of the world.* He differ'd altogether from God, for with him the beſt pieces were ſtill marked out for damnation, and without hope of recovery caſt down into Hell, for though he had many bottoms, yet his conſcience was bottomleſs. Of all weapons he moſt affected

the long Bill, and he who paid him but one half, he would be ſure to be no looſer by him.

An ancient Gentleman one day brought a ſuit of Cloaths to our Shop to be made, who that he might have them the warmer, had bought two yards of Bayes to cotton his breeches in the inner-ſide; my Maſter thought that was too good for ſuch an uſe, and therefore took it to himſelf, and ſupplyed the place with old painting Cloath. It happened afterwards the Gentleman wearing thoſe Cloaths, going to *Iſlington*, as he went over a ſtile, a ſnag or cleft of the ſame took hold of his Breeches and rent a great flaſh or gap in them, that quite diſcover'd my Maſters theft; for right againſt the hole, was the picture of a Devil with a muck-fork in his hand, which made the gentleman to admire how the Devil he ſhould come there; ſearching further he found more of his fellows, and all of them with muck-forks in their hands, tormenting of *Dives* in the flames; this put him in a great rage, to conſider how that by the knavery of the Taylor, he ſhould carry *Hell-fire* in his Breech; ripping the other Slop, there was the *Prodigal* on Horſe-back, his journy into a far Country, Hawks and his Whores, his feeding husks with Swine, with his returning to his Father, and the killing the fatted Calf, wherefore in great rage he came to my Maſter, calling him knave, thief, and a great many other names, ſuch as came firſt to his tongues end; my Maſter deſired him to be quiet, told him it was ſtole off his Shop-board, but for his part, he wiſh'd if he had it that he might find it in the *Hell*, meaning the *Hell* under his Shop-board,

which was the receptacle for all ſtoln goods.

Now thoſe pieces which were condemned to this *Hell*, were termed Cabadge, and we never made any Cloaths either for men or women, in which he ſnipt not ſome pieces from them; ſometimes out of a Suit and Cloak, enough to make a Boy a payer of breeches, or a doublet, and ſometimes enough for breeches and doublet too. Then we drave a trade with the Sadlers, for peices of Cloaths to make feats for Sadles. The Cabadge of courſe Cloath was to make duſt-cloaths for the legs of Country Plough-men, wollen caps, and mittens for old women; all was fiſh that came to net. When a Gentleman bought a ſuit and cloak of good cloath, if my Maſter could but perſwade four or five more to buy of the ſame, out of them all he would ſteal a ſuit and cloak for himſelf. Then for womens cloaths, the cabadge of cloath of ſilver, brancht Sattin, and the like, went for pin-cuſhions, pin-pillows, womens purſes; and if black, Church-wardens caps. Cabadge of Tabbee, coloured Taffaty and Sarcenet, for facings of the hands of doublets, *&c*, when we ſet on gold and ſilver lace, we ſhould ſtretch it ſo, that in four or five yards we would get a quarter of a yard, which with old ſilver buttons and ſuch like ſtuff, went for ends of gold and ſilver; and ſometimes in rich laces we would rub them ſo on our knees, that in eight or nine ounces, half an ounce would come off, which went alſo to the encreaſe of ends of gold and ſilver.

Now being the Under-Prentice, my chief employment was to run on errands, ſo that having thereby an opportunity, I often viſited the *Dagger*

in *Foſter-lane* for pudding-pies, my mouth always either peny loaf or pudding-pie faſhion. Amongſt other places that I went to, one of the chief was a Mercers in *Pater-Noſter-row*, from whence my Maſter received a ſmall ſnip for every Gown he helpt him to cuſtom withall. Now their way of dealing was thus; my maſter bought the ſtuff, then the Mercer was to juſtifie that it coſt him ſo much a yard, perhaps eight or ten ſhillings more in the Gown than it did, for which my Maſter when he brought cuſtomers to him, was to perſwade them to the ſtuff, avouching there was not ſuch another penny-worth in the Town, and that he was confident that he ſaved little or nothing by it; but only for to gain their cuſtome; by which you ſee he who carries a Taylor with him to help him buy Cloaths, carries a Thief in ſtead of a Friend, for the Mercer and Taylor was both agreed, and what the firſt ſays, the other will ſwear to. Now to hear them muſter up the names of their ſtuffs, would make you ſwear they were rayſing ſo many Devils, there's your *Parragon*, *Burragon*, *Phillipine*, *Cheny*, *Grogrum*, *Mow-hair*, *Damaſilly*, *Novato*, *Pinckanilly*, *Pinckadino*, *Prunella*, *Itiliano*, *Caſtiliano*, *Perpetuana*, *Sempiternum*, *Tamme*, *Tammet*, *Tammeletto*, and a thouſand more beſides, ſuch as *Adam* never gave names to, being more for pride than for warmth, and rather to cloath ſin, than to cover nakednefs.

But ere I could attain to any perfection in the Trade, my Maſter dyed of that which he lived by, *the Stich*, being taken with it as he was contriving a new faſhion for a womans placket, that it ſhould be neither before, nor behind, nor on either ſide,

but before he could finiſh his project he was taken with this *Stich*, ſo that that invention was utterly loſt thereby: now becauſe he dyed of ſuch a diſeaſe, I muſter'd up all my wit and invention together, and made for him this Epitaph.

A Taylor in this Grave doth lie,
Who by the Stich *did live and die*;
Longer his lifes thread *might have been,*
But death with's ſheares *came him between,*
Wound up his bottom, *bound his feet,*
And ſow'd *him up in's winding-ſheet.*

My Miſtreſs not continuing the Trade, I was turned over to a Baker, at which I rejoyced exceedingly, being heartily deſirous to be dealing with Belly-timber, remembring how I was full fed when as I lived before with the Cook. Here I found the Maxim to be ſtill true, that there is *knavery in all Trades*, for as my laſt Maſter theived from peoples backs, ſo this robbed their bellies; and was in one ſort worſe than a Taylor, for Taylors commonly filch their Cabadge only from the rich, who can the better ſpare it; but a Baker by making his bread leſſer than it ſhould be, ſtealeth it out of the poor peoples bellies, for doing which he deſerveth the ſame fate to attend on him as did on *Pharaohs* Baker, viz. hanging; or at leaſtwiſe to look through an oaken planck, and ſhew the people a knaves head.

He would be ſure to be in ſee with the Clark of the Market, and pretended great love to him, though he hated him as his Executioner. By this meanes he had always timely notice of my

Lord Mayors going about, when he would be ſure to have his bread full weight ſtand at his window; and if at any time he chanc'd to be catcht, oh how he would repine at his forc'd charity, to ſee his bread given away to the poor, hating Juſtice it ſelf for the *weigh-ſcales ſake*, though it did the Beggars as much good as their dinner, to ſee his basket ſent to the priſon.

When we had any ſtale mouldy bread, ſuch as we could not ſell our ſelves, or was returned us again by our cuſtomers, we uſed to ſoak it in water, and ſo mould it up again in our dough, which in Summer time at four days end would roap ſo, that if you pul'd it in pieces it would appear as if it were all Cobwebs, which made us always to ſell ſuch bread new. Now what other *Knaveries* he uſed in his trade, I was not there long enough to know them: for becauſe I uſed to forget to riſe betimes in a morning, my Maſter would remember me with a good aſhen wand which he always kept in ſtore by him, wherewith he would beat me as your Sea-men do Stock-fiſh, in ſo much that my fleſh had on it all the colours in the Rain-bow, *viz.* black, blew, green, red, yellow, white, *&c.* above all things in the world I liked not beating, wherefore I reſolved to march off, yet before I went I purpoſed to be in part revenged on him for thoſe many blows he had given me. Now ſo it was that he lay above ſtairs, and I below, and when he came down, if he found me not up and about my buſineſs, he would ſo rib-roaſt me, that I could have felt no cold although it had been froſty weather. Againſt that morning I intended to be gone, I had parched ſome peaſe in the

oven, that they were almoſt as hard as leaden bullets; them did I ſtrow here and there upon the ſtairs againſt my Maſters coming down, and ſo having put up my things, and made my ſelf ready, I ſtaid expecting what the event would be, anon my Maſter called me at the ſtairs head, I heard him very well, but made him no anſwer, wherefore he ſuppoſing I was aſleep, was coming down to give me the baſtinado, when treading on the peaſe his heels flew up, and down he came tumbling from the top to the bottom, ſwearing all the way he was falling, that this damn'd Rogue (meaning me) intended for to break his neck; I hearing him to thunder ſo loud, thought it would lighten upon my Jacket preſently, and therefore to prevent it, I opened the door and ſhewed him a fair payr of heels, leaving him ſore bruiſed with his fall, and more vexed that he could not come at me, to revenge himſelf of me for the ſame.

CHAP. XIII.

He ſerveth a Plaiſterer, ſheweth ſome cheats in that Trade, he is even with the Maid of the Houſe for her ſloath, and puniſhing him; giveth his Maſter a fall from the Scaffold, and runneth away from him into the Country.

I Was now grown a good ſturdy Lad, and it being then the ſpring of the year, I was entertained into a Plaiſterers ſervice, I imagined with my felf that there could be no knavery in this trade, but after I had bin there a while, I found there was a great deal of difference in our labour when we work't by the day, and when we wrought by the great; in the one I could not be too quick for my Maſter, in the other he cared not how ſlow; diſpatching that in ſix days in the one, which we would hardly do in ten days in the other; in the one we minded only our work, in the other we uſed to lengthen out the time with diſcourſes of wenches, foot-ball playing and ſuch like; for ſo we brought the day to an end, we cared not ſo much for our work going forward, ſeeing our wages ran parallel with the day, and when that was done, we counted our money due,

whether we earned it or no. In this ſervice I lived like a Prince to my hearts content, for my Maſter would not only wink at any Rogueries that I committed, but alſo countenance me in the doing of them. When we wrought upon ſcaffolds in the ſtreet it was a great pleaſure to me to throw the morter upon the heads of young wenches as they paſſed by; and at other times with our whiting to beſpatter Gentlemens Cloaks as they walked under us, that they looked as if the Crow had ſhit upon them. My Maſter kept a maid who was none of thoſe huſwifes that uſe to diſturb other peoples ſleeps by their early riſing; ſhe would endure three calls in a morning, and when ſhe began to ſtirre, ſhe would groan ſadly, ſtretching out her arms and legs, and giving a two or three ha's to get upon her breech, where ſhe would ſit in her bed half an hour lacing of her boddice, and throwing of her coats over her head, ſo that we were forced to put up the victuals we carried with us our ſelves. My Maſter asked me if I could not invent a way to puniſh her ſloath? I told him I would do my beſt endeavor; ſo that day I got ſome Horſe-hair and ſhred it fit for my purpoſe, telling my Maſter what I would do with it; at night when he came home, he ſent the maid for two pots of Ale, when ſhe was gone for it, I took my ſhred hair, and ſtrowed the ſame in her bed betwixt the ſheets, which plagued her worſe then if ſhe had had half a peck of ſix footed vermine to her bedfellows; a good while ſhe endured it, being exceeding loath to be at the pains of putting on her Cloaths, for ſhe always accounted the trouble of dreſſing and undreſſing her ſelf to

be a great plague inflicted on mortals to diſturb them of their eaſe, accounting the Birds in a far happier condition than men, who go to bed and riſe with their doublet and breeches on, and was reſolved if ſhe changed her Religion to have turned *Adamite*, that ſhe might have ſaved that labour of dreſſing her ſelf; but the hair tormented her ſo abominably, that *nolens volens* ſhe was forced to riſe, and ſit up until the morning, when looking in the ſheets ſhe found the cauſe of her diſquietneſs; the cunning Jade made no ſpeech of it at all, but was as pleaſant that morning as if ſhe had ailed nothing all night; which made me to miſtruſt my art, and think I had not done my buſineſs right. All that day ſhe was buſied with her thoughts in contriving miſchief againſt me, the reſult whereof was, that ſhe took the ſheets from off her bed and laid them on mine, whereby ſhe paid me home in my own coyn, and whereof I could not juſtly complain, ſeeing what was ſauſe for a Gooſe was ſauce for a Gander. I had work'd very hard that day, and would willingly have taken ſome reſt at night, but it was in vain to think of it, I might almoſt have lain as well upon pins and needles as on what I did, I then thought upon the ſtory which is uſually told Boys when they firſt come to be Prentices concerning their enroling, that they muſt be rol'd in a Barrel drove full of nails, with the points ſticking up, and thought this puniſhment to be little inferior to that; fleſh and blood could not endure it, wherefore I got up and uncaſed my bed of the ſheets, creeping in betwixt the blanckets where I lay all night. In the morning the maid asked me how I ſlept that night? I told her very well, for my

skin was armor of proof againſt the biting of fleas, or any other diſturbance whatſoever, but though I carried fair weather in my countenance, my heart boyled in revenge againſt her, wherefore that day I went and bought two penny-worth of Cow-itch, which is a drug of that nature, that where it touches the fleſh, it will make them ſo ſcrub ſeventeen times worſe than if they were plagued with the itch, with this I anointed her ſheets in the ſame manner as I ſtrowed them with horſe-hair before; but if the hair netled, this fleyed, ſhe had needed to have had *Briarius* hundred hands to have ſcratcht her ſelf at once, for when ſhe came to be a little hot in her bed, ſhe fared like a mad woman; the more ſhe ſcratcht the more it itcht, ſo that by what ſhe ſeek't to allay her paine, ſhe encreas'd it: the going out of her bed would not cure her now, ſhe carried her diſtemper along with her, ſo that knowing not how to eaſe her ſelf, ſhe bellowed like a Bull, and made ſuch a quarter, that the whole houſe was diſturbed with her bellowing. All night ſhe continued thus; in the morning I began to play upon her, told her that the ſcratching of her arſe ſignified we [ſhould have butter cheap, and that how ever things went ſhe would be ſure to *Rub* through with them, but had I not took my heels, ſhe had ſo rubbed my ears for it, as would have turned my mirth into mourning. That day was very fatal to me, and my running from the maid in the morning, prognoſticated I ſhould run from my Maſter before night. It ſo happened that we had ſome work to do that day at a tavern in *Thames-ſtreet*, the back-ſide whereof adjoyned to the *Thames*, which the Vintner would have beau-

tified next to the water-ſide; now for to make him a ſcaffold to work on, he put the ends of two long ſticks out at the window, laying a board over them for him to ſtand on the out-ſide; and on the in-ſide faſtned the end of the one with a cord, but wanting a cord for the other, he bid me to ſit on it, thereby to keep it from kicking up, thus was all things ordered, my Maſter gotten up upon his ſcaffold, which was juſt over the water, and I ſitting on the end of the ſtick; he fell a ſinging as he was accuſtomed to do at his work, and I fell a nodding, being lulled a ſleep with his ſinging; in my ſleep I dreamt that my old Maſter the Cook was alive again, that I lived with him, and that our Houſe was full of Gueſts; by and by ſome Gentlemen knocked in the next room, I hearing them, imagined that I was called, and thereupon cryed out, *Anon, Anon, I come I come Sir*, and thereupon fell a running, when preſently up flew the ſtick, and down fell my Maſter, crying all the way he fell *help, help, I ſhall be drown'd*, the noiſe he made waked me out of my ſleep, when looking forth of the window, I ſaw my Maſter floating like a ſhitle-cock upon the water. I ſeeing what had happened, thought more upon ſaving my ſelf than him, imagining if he were drowned, that I ſhould be hanged, and therefore that I might not die the death of a dog, to prevent it, I run away, leaving my Maſter to ſhift for himſelf, whom though yet I loved well, and would not have parted from him but for this accident.

I made great haſte in going, and yet knew not whither to go; Eaſt, Weſt, North, or South, all

was indifferent to me, for it is impoſſible he can be out of his way to whom all ways are alike. *London* though large and populous I judged no Coverture for me, I wanting thoſe two great helps of concealment, mony and friends. The Country therefore I pitcht upon, invited thereto the more, it being then the merry month of *May*, the pleaſanteſt time of all the year, the earth having then put on her richeſt apparel, the meddow cloathed in green, the fields beautified with flowers, and the woods adorned with Violets, Cowſlips, and Primroſes; the winged Choriſters of the Forreſt, warbled forth their ditties very harmoniouſly, the Lambs friskt and leapt, dancing lavalto's on the flowry paſtures, and the murmuring ſtream made a noyſe like to a Chime of Bells, running through their winding *Meanders*. As I walked thus in the Countrey, encircled with pleaſures, and every where having my eyes fatiated with variety of pleaſing objects, I thought my ſelf to be in *Paradiſe*, and imagined no pleaſure in the world comparable to that of a Country life; Happy, yea thrice happy (thought I) is he who not playing with his wings in the golden flames of the Court, nor fetting his foot in the buſie throngs of the City, nor running up and down in the intricate mazes of the Law, can be content in the winter to ſit by a Country fire, and in the Summer to lay his head on the green pillows of the earth. The Country Cottage is neither batter'd down by the Canon in time of War, nor peſter'd with clamorous Suits in time of peace. The fall of *Cedars* that tumble from the tops of Kingdoms, the ruine of *great Houſes*, that bury

Families in their overthrow, and the ways of *ſhip-wracks*, that beget even ſhreiks in the heart of Cities, never ſend their terrors thither: that place ſtands as ſafe from the ſhock of ſuch violent ſtorms, as the *Bay-tree* does from lightening; their ſleeps are ſecure from ſuch dangers, and their wakings as pleaſant as golden dreams. In the homely village art thou more ſafe, than in a fortified Caſtle; the ſtings of *Envy*, nor the bullets of *Treaſon* are never ſhot through thoſe thin walls: ſound healths are drunk out of the wholeſome wooden diſh, when the Cup of Gold boyles over with Poyſon. Haſt thou a deſire to rule? get up to the mountains, and thou ſhalt ſee the greateſt trees ſtand trembling before thee, to do thee *Reverence*, thoſe mayeſt thou call thy *Nobles*. Thou ſhalt have rancks of oak on each ſide of thee, which thou maiſt call thy Guard, thou ſhalt ſee *Willows* bending at every blaſt; whom thou maiſt call thy flatterers: thou ſhalt ſee valleys humbled at thy feet; whom thou maiſt term thy ſlaves. Wouldeſt thou behold battels? ſtep into the fields, there ſhalt thou ſee excellent combats between the ſtanding Corn and the windes. Art thou a tyrant? and delighteſt in the fall of *great ones*? muſter then thy Harveſters together, and down with thoſe proud Summer Lords when they are at higheſt. Wouldeſt thou have *Subſidies* paid thee? the *Plough* ſends thee in Corn, the *Meadow* gives thee her paſture, the Trees pay thee cuſtome with their fruit, the *Ox* beſtows upon thee his labor, the *Sheep* his wooll, the *Cow* her milk, the *Fowles* their Feathers, &c. Doeſt thou call for *Muſick*? no Prince in the

world keeps more skilful muſitians, the Birds are thy Conſort, and the winde inſtruments they play upon yield ten thouſand tunes.

Thus went I on contemplating the Summers pride and the Earths bravery, and from them both concluded the great felicity of a Country life, as if the one would never fade, and the other always endure; reſolving in my thoughts never to ſee *London* again, being raviſhed with the delights of the verdant fields, and enamour'd on the beauties of the Spring, accounting none truly happy, but he who enjoyed the felicities of a Country life; Is he addicted to ſtudy, Heaven is the Library; the Sun, Moon and Stars his books to teach him *Aſtronomy*, that great volume his *Ephemerides* out of which he may Calculate predictions of times to follow; yea in the very clouds are written leſſons of *Divinity* for him to inſtruct him in wiſdome, the turning over their leaves, teach him the variation of feaſons, & how to diſpoſe his buſineſs for all weathers, who therefore would not conſume his youth in ſuch delightfull ſtudies, that have power in them to keep off old age longer than it would? or when old age doth come, is able to give it the livelyhood and vigour of youth? who would not rather ſit at the foot of a hill, tending a flock of ſheep, than at the helm of Authority, controuling the ſtubborn and unruly multitude? Better it is in the ſolitary woods and in the wilde fields, to be a man among *Beaſts*, than in the midſt of a peopled City, to be a *Beaſt* amongſt men.

As I was thus ſtricken into admiration of theſe

beauties, and wholy taken up in contemplations of the felicities of an retired life, being already in my thoughts an abſolute Country-man, I being now ſome miles diſtant from the *Metropolitan* City of our fruitful *Albion*, on a ſudden the welkin began to rore, and ſend forth terrible peales of thunder, the ſerene sky was over-ſhadowed, and *Phœbus* hid his head behind a cloud, the Heavens began firſt to weep ſmall tears, afterwards to pour them in full Rivolets upon the thirſty earth, I had then no Pent-houſe to walk under to keep me from the rain, nor was there a red lattice at every nook and corner (as at *London*) to give me entertainment; the ſpreading boughs of the ſturdy oak were too feeble to defend me from being wet; I looked like a drench't Mouſe, having never a dry thread on me; what to do I knew not, money I had but little, friends none, a ſtranger both to the place and people, unexperienced in the world, as in the way where I travelled; the conſideration of thoſe things made me add more moyſture to the earth by the ſalt tears that trickled from my eyes; to ſtand ſtill I thought was in vain, ſo forwards I went wet without, and dry within, (ſorrow they ſay cauſeth drowth) at length I ſpyed by a corner of a wood a little thatcht Cottage, thither I went, and found by an old rotten ſtick that darted out of it, in imitation of a Sign-poſt, that it was an Ale-houſe; this ſomething revived my drooping ſpirits, ſo in I went, to dry my out-ſide and wet my in-ſide, where I found a good fire, and ſtore of company of both ſexes merrily trouling the bowl about, ſinging of Catches, and ſmoaking Tobacco; no ſooner was

I entered, but one of them drank to me a full cup, ſo down I ſat amongſt them, being all alike free Citizens of the wide world, the ſtrong Ale ſoon waſhed away all ſorrow from my heart, and now that I had a warm fire to ſit by, and a houſe over my head, I bid a fig for all foul weather.

CHAP. XIV.

He lighteth on a company of Canting Beggars, *and is* ſtalled *one of their ſociety, is married to a* Doxy, *with the manner of their wedding.*

THis company that I thus happened into was a *Crew* of *Canting Beggars*, Pilgrims of the vaſt earth, the offspring of *Cain*, vagabonds and wanderers over the whole world, fit Companions for ſuch who make a trade for Idleneſs and Roguery, and theſe were at this time fit companions for me, who ſeeing the merry life they led, reſolved to make one of their company, whereupon (after I had a little more ingratiated my ſelf amongſt them, and taken two or three cups more of *Rum-booz*) I imparted my inventions to one of the chief of them, telling him that I was a Prentice who had a curſt Maſter, whoſe cruelties had cauſed me to run away from him, and that what ever fortune might betide me, yet ſhould not the moſt neceſſitous condition I could be plunged into, ever make me to return to him again, and therefore if I might be admitted into their ſociety, I ſhould faithfully obſerve and perform what rules and orders were impoſed upon me.

He very much applauded me for my reſolutions, telling me that to be a *Beggar* was to be a *brave man* ſince it was now in faſhion for brave men to beg. Do not we (ſaid he) come all into the world like arrant *Beggars*, without a rag upon us; and do not we all go out of the world like *Beggars*, without any thing ſaving only an old ſheet to cover us? ſhall we then be aſhamed to walk up and down in the world like *Beggars*, with old Blankets pinn'd about us? no, no, that were a ſhame to us indeed; have we not the whole kingdom to walk at our pleaſure? are we afraid of the approach of Quarter-day? do we walk in fear of Bailiffs, Serjeants and Catch-poles? who ever knew an arrant *Beggar* arreſted for debt? is not our meat dreſt in every mans Kitchen? does not every mans cellar afford us beer? and the beſt mens purſes keep a penny for us to ſpend?

Having by theſe words (as he thought) fully fixed me in love with begging, he then acquainted the Company with my deſires, who were all of them very joyful thereof, being as glad to add one to their ſociety, as a *Turk* is to gain a Proſelite to *Mahomet.* The firſt queſtion that they asked me was, if I had any *Loure* in my *Bung?* I ſtared on them not knowing what they meant, till at laſt one told me it was mony in my purſe; I told them I had but eighteen pence, which I freely gave them; this by a general vote was condemned to be ſpent in *Bouſe* for my initiation. Then they commanded me to kneel down, which being done, one of the chief of them took a Gage of *Bowſe*, which is a quart of drink, and

poured the ſame on my head, ſaying, I do by vertue of this Soveraign liquor, *ſtall thee to the Rogue*, and make thee a free Denizen of our ragged Regiment; ſo that henceforth it ſhall be lawful for thee to *Caut* and to carry a *Doxy* or *Mort* along with thee, only obſerving theſe rules. Firſt that thou art not to wander up and down all Countries, but to keep only to that Quarter which is allotted to thee! and ſecondly, thou art to give way to any of us that have born all the Offices of the *Wallet* before thee, and upon holding up a finger to avoid any Town or Country village where thou ſeeſt we are forraging to victual our army that march along with us. Obſerving theſe two rules, we take thee into our protection, and adopt thee a Brother of our numerous ſocieiy.

He having ended his oration, I roſe up, and was congratulated by all the Company, hanging about me like ſo many dogs about a Beare, and leaping and ſhouting like ſo many mad men, making ſuch a confuſed noyſe with their gabling, that the melody of a dozen oyſter-wives at *Billingſgate*, the ſcolding at ten Conduits, and the Goſſipings of fifteen Bake-houſes were not comparable unto it. At length he that *ſtalled me* cryed out for ſilence, bidding the French and Engliſh Pox to light on their throats for making ſuch a yelping; then fixing his eyes upon me, he read a Lecture to me out of the Devils Hornbook as followeth.

Now (faith he) that thou art enter'd into our fraternity, thou muſt not ſcruple to act any villanies which thou ſhall be able to perform; whether it be to *nip* a *bung*, *bite* the *Peter*, *Cloy* the *Lurries*,

Craſh either a *Bleating cheat*, *Cackling cheat*, *grunting cheat*, *quacking cheat*, *Tib oth buttery*, *Margery prater*, or to *Cloy a Miſh* from the *Crackmans:* that is, to *cut* a *purſe*, *ſteal a Cloak-bag* or *portmantle*, *convey* away all manner of *Cloaths*, either a *Sheep*, *Chicken*, *ſucking Pig*, *Duck*, *Gooſe*, *Hen*, or *ſteal* a *ſhirt* from the hedg; for he that will be a *Quier Cove*, a profeſt Rogue, muſt obſerve this rule, ſet own by and ancient *Patrico* in theſe words.

Wilt thou a begging go,
O perſe o, o perſe o,
Then muſt thou God forſake
And to the Devil thee betake
O perſe o, &c.

And becauſe thou art as yet but a Novice in begging, and underſtandeſt not the myſteries of the *Canting* language, to principle thee the better, thou ſhalt have a *Doxy* to be thy Companion, by whom thou maiſt receive fit inſtructions for thy purpoſe. And thereupon he ſingled me out a young Girl of about fourteen years of age, which tickled my fancy very much that I had gotten a young wanton to dally withal; but this was not all, I muſt preſently be married unto her after their faſhion by their *Patrico*, (who amongſt *Beggars* is their Prieſt) which was done after this manner.

They got a Hen, and having cut off the head of it, laid the dead body upon the ground, placing me on the one ſide of it, and my *Doxy* on the other; this being done, the *Patrico* ſtanding by,

with a loud voice *bid us live together till death did us part;* then one of the Company went into the yard and fetcht a dry Cow-turd, which was broken over my *Dox's* head in imitation of a Bride-cake; and ſo ſhaking hands, and kiſſing each other, the Ceremony of the wedding was over, and for joy of the marriage we fell to drinking afreſh, till we were all *as drunk as Beggars;* but then to hear the gabling noyſe we made, would have made you to have bleſt your ſelf, to hear ſuch a *Babel* of confuſion amongſt us, ſome were jabbering in the *Canting Language*, others in their own, ſome did nothing but weep and proteſt love to their *Morts*, others ſwore ſwords and daggers to cut the throats of their *Doxy's* if they found them tripping; one would drink a health to the Bride till he ſlavered again, ſome were for ſinging Bawdy ſongs, others were diviſing Curſes for Juſtices of Peace, Head-boroughs, and Conſtables; at laſt night approaching, and all their mony being ſpent, we betook us to a Barn not far off, where we *coucht a Hogſhead in the darkmans*, and went to ſleep.

CHAP. XV.

The Orders and Degrees of the Canting Beggars, Men and Women, with their ſeveral qualities and manner of life.

THough my lodging was homely, my bedfellow pleaſed, yet though ſhe were ſo young, I could not boaſt of the purchaſe of her Maidenhead, that being a dainty beſtowed always on the *Upright-men* (the chief of the Rogues) who muſt have the firſt taſte of ſuch morſels, and then are they free for any of the Brother-hood. The whole night was ſpent in prigging, wapping; and telling of drunken ſtories; in the morning as ſoon as *Phœbus* began to dart ſome of his beams through the Crannies of the walls, the *Patrico* began to ſet up his *larum*, and to waken the reſt with this ſong.

This is Bien Bowſe, *this is* Bien Bowſe,
Too little is my skew.
I Bowſe *no* Lage, *but a whole* Gage
Of this ile Bowſe *to you.*

This Bowſe *is better than* Rom-Bowſe,
It ſets the Gan *a gigling*;

The Autem Mort *finds better ſport*
In Bowſing *than in* nigling.

Tis better than Peckidge, Plannam,
Than Yarum, Loure, *or* Lage;
Then lift the ſame up to thy Nab,
And Bowſe *off a whole* Gage.

Being thus rowſed, and having ſhaken our eares a little, the *Upright man* (who was the Bel-weather of the flock) appointed out the ſtation wherein every one ſhould go, prefixing a day wherein we were all to meet again. My *Doxy* and I had a particular walk aſſigned unto us, wherein we were to travel, and not to intrench upon any of the others limits; whilſt I thus rambled about with her, I learned of her the ſeveral qualities and offices of the Brother-hood, and how they were diſtinguiſhed from each other according to their degrees of *ſuperiority* and *inferiority*: the men were divided into theſe twenty ſeveral ſorts.

1 *Upright men.*
2 *Rufflers.*
3 *Anglers.*
4 *Rogues.*
5 *Wilde Rogues.*
6 *Priggers of Prancers.*
7 *Palliards, or Clapper-dugeons.*
8 *Fraters.*
9 *Quire Birds.*
10 *Abraham-men.*
11 *Whip-jacks.*
12 *Counterfeit Crancks.*
13 *Dummerars.*
14 *Jack-men.*
15 *Patrico's.*
16 *Iriſh Toyles.*
17 *Swigmen.*
18 *Glymmerars.*
19 *Curtalls.*
20 *Kinchen Co's.*

Of the Women kinde were only theſe ſix.

1 *Kitchen Morts.*
2 *Dells.*
3 *Doxies.*
4 *Walking Morts.*
5 *Autem Morts.*
6 *Bawdy Baskets.*

And now what theſe ſeveral ſorts of people are, you ſhall hear by their deſcriptions.

1. An *Upright-man* is the chief of all the Ragged Regiment, he walks like a Commander with a ſhort Truncheon in his hand which he calls his *Filch-man*; pretends himſelf to be a decayed Souldier, and claimes a ſhare in all the Booties which any other inferior *Rogues* do get; he hath all the *Morts* and *Doxies* at his beck, and can command them from any other of the *Gang* at his pleaſure. By this deſcription you ſee there is a great deal of difference betwixt an *Upright man* and an *honeſt man.*

2 A *Ruffler* is the ſame in Conditions as an *Upright man, like to like quoth the* Devil *to the* Collier; they both of them pretend themſelves to be decayed Souldiers, are both of them very imperious over the inferior Subjects of their *Common-wealth*: receiving tribute alſo from *Rogues, Palliards, Morts, Doxies, &c.*

3 The next are *Anglers*, but they ſeldome catch Fiſh till they go up *Weſtward* for *Flounders.* The Rod they angle with is a ſtaff of five or ſix foot in length, having a hole bored through it within an inch of the top, into which hole do they put an iron hook, and with the ſame do they angle at windows about midnight, drawing therewith apparrel, ſheets, coverlets, or whatſoever they lay hold on, *All is Fiſh that comes to Net.*

4 A *Rogue*, whoſe very name doth ſhow his nature, and therefore he ſhall not need any further deſcription.

5 A *Wild Rogue* is of the ſame nature as a *Rogue*, only this is the difference, that the one falls into this infamous and deteſtable courſe of life, either thorough lazineſs, death of Parents, cruelty of Maſters, or the like, the wild *Rogue* is bred up to it from his ſwadling clouts, born a *Rogue*, lives all his whole life a *Rogue*, and diſdaines to take upon him any calling or profeſſion whatſoever, but as he lives, ſo dies a *Rogue*.

6 *Priggers of Prancers* are Horſe-ſtealers, for to *Prig*, ſignifies in the *Canting language* to ſteal, and *Prancer* ſignifies a Horſe, the Farmers in the Country, and Gentlemen that keep Horſes, know theſe ſorts of *Rogues* too well, by dear experience.

7 *Palliards*, otherwiſe called *Clapperdugeons*, who go alwayes with their *Morts* at their heels, and to draw people the more to pitty them, with *Sperewort* or *Arſnick* raiſe bliſters on their legs, which they can cure again at their pleaſure. When they come into the ſtreets of a Town or Country village, they divide themſelves, and beg one on one ſide of the ſtreet, and the other on the other ſide; the purchaſe which they thus get, they ſell to poor Tradeſmen, or other labouring people, and with the money are merry at the Bowſing-ken.

8 A *Frater* is one that with a Counterfeit Patent goeth about with a wallet at his back, and a black box at his girdle, to beg for ſome Hoſpital or Spittle-houſe; he hath always a *Doxy* whom

he meets withall at night at ſome tippling-houſe, where they lewdly ſpend what was given him in the day by charitable well-minded people.

9 *Quire Birds* are thoſe in whom the Proverb is verified, *Birds of a feather, Rogues together*, they are ſuch as formerly ſung in ſuch Cages as *Newgate*, the *White Lyon*, or ſome other Country *Goale*.

10 *Abraham-men*, or a *Tom of Bedlam* is a man whom by his black and blew arms you may ſee to be much beaten to the world; he counterfeits madneſs, and by many Phantaſtick tricks gets from ſilly Country people Bacon, and ſuch other victuals as will fetch him ready money; he hath but two names for all people whatſoever, and that is *Tom* and *Beſs*. No man ſhifts his linnen oftner than he does his wenches.

11 *Whipjacks* are ſuch as travel about from town to town under the notion of Shipwrackt *Seamen*, with a counterfeit licence to beg, which licence they call a *Gybe*, and the ſeals to it *Jarks*; their talk is all of Sea-voyages, but the end of their Land-voyage is for what they can get, and to rob Booths at Fairs, which they call *Heaving of the Booth*, at which they are very expert.

12 *Counterfeit Cranks* are ſuch as pretend themſelves to have the *Falling-ſickneſs*, and by putting a piece of white ſoap into the corner of their mouths, will make the froath to come boyling forth to cauſe pitty in the beholders; they ſtare wildly with their eyes to appear as if diſtracted, and go half naked to move the greater compaſſion. Theſe *Cranks* have likewiſe their meetings, and their wenches at command.

13 The *Dummerar* is Couſin-German to the *Cranks*, for as the one counterfeits the *falling-ſickneſs*, ſo this counterfeits dumbneſs, making a horrid noiſe inſtead of ſpeech by doubling his tongue in his mouth, but if you give him nothing, he can then open his mouth to curſe you privately. This *Jack* hath alſo his *Jill*, upon whom he ſpends his *Loure* at the *Bowſingken*.

14 A *Jackman* is one that can write and reade, yea ſome of them have a ſmattering in the *Latine* tongue; which learning of theirs advances them in office amongſt the *Beggars*, as to be *Clark of their Hall*, or the like. His employment is to make *Gybes* with *Jarkes* to them, which are counterfeit licences with ſeals, by which he gets ſtore of money to make himſelf drunk withal.

15 The *Patrico* is their Prieſt, every hedge is his Pariſh, and every wandring Rogue and Whore is his Pariſhioner. His ſervice is onely marrying of couples, by bidding them go together and multiply, and fill the world with a generation of vagabonds.

16 *Iriſh Toyls* are luſty Rogues who go about with a wallet at their back, in which they carry pinns, poynts, laces, and ſuch like, and under colour of ſelling ſuch wares commit many villanies.

17 A *Swigman* is a degree higher than an *Iriſh toyle*, as a Tavern exceeds an Ale-houſe, for he carries a pack behind him in ſtead of a wallet, and is ſtored with more ſorts of ware than the other, yet differs little from him in honeſty; they both pay tribute to the *Upright man*, as to their chief.

18 *Glymmerars* are ſuch as travel up and down

with licences to beg, becaufe their houfes have been confumed with fire, for *Glymmer* in the *Canting tongue* fignifies fire. They ufe a very fad tone in their begging, and tell a lamentable ftory how the fire deftroyed their Barns, Stables, &c. by which lying tales they get ftore of *Loure* to buy *Bub* at the *Bowfingken.*

19. *Curtals* are fo called becaufe they wear fhort Cloafes, being of the fame nature as the Rogues defcribed before.

20. The laft *ranck* of this *Rambling Crew* are termed *Kinchin Co's*, being little Boys, whofe Parents were formerly *Beggars*, but are now dead, or elfe fuch as have run away from their Mafters, and inftead of a trade to live by, follow this kinde of life to be lowfie by. The firft thing they do is to learn how to *Cant*, and the onely thing they practice is to creep in at windows or Cellar doors.

Thus have I given you a brief defcription of the men, by which you may give a fhrewd guefs of the women; for you cannot imagine if the one were *Devils*, that the other would be *Saints*, take them therefore in their own Character.

1. Of this fort the firft of them are called *Kinchen Morts*, their Mothers carry at their backs in their *Slates*, id eft, *fheets.* When the *Morts* beg, they ufe to prick thefe *Kinchens* with pins, that by their crying they may move people to a fpeedier diftribution of their alms.

2. *Dells* are young wenches that have not loft their maiden-heads, but being once deflowred, (which commonly is when they are very young)

they then change the name of *Dell* into *Doxy*, even as maids when they come to be married, loofe that appellation, and are called women.

3. *Doxeys* are fuch as have been deflowred by the *Upright-men*, and are after common to any of the Brotherhood. They will if they fee convenient for a fmall piece of money proſtitute their bodies to any that will deal with them, and do too often murther thofe Infants which are fo gotten. They have one ſpecial badge to be known by, for moſt of them go working of laces and ſhirt-ſtrings, or fuch like ſtuff, onely to give colour to their idle wandring.

4. A *walking Mort* is one that hath increafed the world with Lullaby-cheats or young Children, yet was never married; they are very dangerous Queans to meet withal, being cunning in diffembling, and without all fear of God and good laws; and are kept in awe onely by the *Upright-men*, who oftentimes rifle them of all that they have.

5. An *Autem Mort* is another fort of thefe *ſhe-devils*, and differs onely from a *walking Mort* in that ſhe is married; for *Autem* in the Canting tongue ſignifies a *Church*, although that be a place ſhe feldom comes at. They commonly walk with their Wallets on their ſhoulders, and *Slates* or ſheets at their backs, and will pilfer any thing that lies careleſly about houſes, which they call in their language *Nilling of the ken*. Their Husbands commonly are *Rufflers*, *Upright-men*, *Wilde Rogues*, *&c.*

6. The laſt of this *Ragged Regiment* are called *Bawdy Baskets*, which are women that walk with Baskets or Cap-cafes on their arms, wherein they

have pinns, points, needles, and ſuch like things to ſell, going thus from houſe to houſe, to ſell their ware ; buy *Cunny-skins*, and ſteal what they can lay their hands on, driving three trades at once. They are very fair ſpoken, and will ſeldome ſwear whileſt they are ſelling their wares, but will lie with any man that hath a minde to them. The *Upright-men* and theſe are in perfect league and amity one with another.

Thus have I briefly diſſected to you this knot of *Vipers*, who may very fitly be termed the *Devils black Guard.* Whoſe whole life conſiſteth of a continued act of all impiety, no ſin within their verge but is frequently committed amongſt them, eſpecially that ſin of leachery ; to which end you ſhall find ſometimes together in a Barn forty of theſe *Uprightmen*, *Rufflers*, *Clapperdugeons*, *&c.* ingendring *Beggars* with their *Morts.* Adultery they boaſt of, Inceſt they laugh at, Sodomy they Jeſt at, being all of the Family of *Love* or Luſt rather, rope ripe, Nuts for the Devils cracking, and fit fuel for firing for his Kitchen. But I have dwelt too long upon this filthy ſubject, I ſhall only give you a brief Character of a *Canting Rogue*, and ſo return to the progreſs of my own life.

He ſhould ſeem by his rambling minde to be begot by ſome Intelligencer under a hedge, for he is wholly addicted to travel, and hath one eſpecial priviledge above moſt Travellers, that he is never out of the way. He is not troubled with making of Joyntures ; he can divorce himſelf without the Fee of a *Proctor*, nor fears he the cruelty of

Overſeers of his Will; for there is ſmall danger of his Children being cheated of their Eſtates, by which means he makes not work for the Lawyers after his deceaſe. He leaves his Children all the world to *Cant* in, and all the people to be their fathers to provide for them. His language is always one and the ſame; the Northern ſpeech differs from the South, Welſh from the Corniſh, but *Canting* is general, nor ever could be altered by Conqueſt of the *Saxon*, *Dane*, or *Norman*. He will not beg out of the limit preſcribed him by the *Upright-man*, though he ſtarve; nor falſifie his oath, if he ſwear by his *Solomon* (which is the *Maſs*) though you hang him; and to ſhow himſelf a true ſubject of their Common-wealth, he pays his cuſtom as truly to his Grand Rogue, as tribute is paid to the Great Turk.

The Spring is as welcome to him, as a warm Bed to a weary Traveller, for then begins his progreſs after a hard Winter; and the Sun which breeds Agues in others, he adores it like the *Indian*. *Oſtlers* cannot endure him, for he is of the *Infantry*, and ſerves beſt on foot; and if through ſicknefs at any time he ride, his ſtage is but to the next Town, and that in a Dung-cart. He offends not the Statute againſt the exceſs of Apparel; the fuller of Rags, the more faſhionable for his Calling; and to go naked, he accounts but a voluntary pennance. Forty of them will lye in a Barn together, yet are never ſued upon the Statute of In-mates. He ſhifts Lodgings oftner than men ſhift their ſhirts, and hath more change of *Morts* and *Doxies*, than he hath of Lodgings. If he were learned, no

man could make a better Deſcription of *England*, for he hath ſurveyed it more exactly than the beſt Coſmographer whatſoever, having travell'd it over and over. Laſtly, he can brag of this, that repairing of houſes will never undo him; and that though he eats and drinks every day, yet he ſhall not die one penny in debt either to the Brewer, or to the Butcher.

CHAP. XVI.

In proſecution of his begging, he ſteals a Hen, is taken in the manner, and whipped, and impriſoned in the Cage; from whence he eſcapes, and aſſiſts in the robbing of a Houſe, where he gets a good Booty and eſcapes, but his Companions are caught; one hanged, and two tranſported: He hearing this, makes haſte to London.

IT was then the Spring of the year when I took this laze trade of life upon me; the harmony of the Birds ſinging, and the variety of the Flowers which beautified the verdant Fields, made me the more willing to embrace this ſordid courſe, not thinking of a winter that would ſtrike dumb thoſe winged Choriſters, and inveſt the Earth with a robe of Snow, in ſtead of all her painted Bravery. Cuſtom had ſoon habituated me to a liking of lodging in ſtraw, attracted the more by my amorous Bed-fellow, and ſo long as I had my fill of eaſe, I could well be contented to faſt from Dainties. But for my life I could not bring my tongue to the right tone of Begging, although I were habited fit for the purpoſe, with a dirty Night-cap loathſome to

behold, my face all ſmearen, my cloths ſet full with patches upon the whole cloath, a red clout upon my leg, and ſupporting my body with a ſtaff as if I had been a meer criple. Many a mile we rambled, yet keeping ſtill in our own ſtation, for fear of the *Upright-man:* but my counterfeit plea for begging was at laſt diſcovered, and to all my dainties I had whipping chear added; for going one day not far off from a Farm houſe, the ſtragling Hens invited me to have a throw at them with my ſtaff, and having ſtruck one of them, I had forgotten my lameneſs, but very nimbly ran and took her up, putting her under my patcht Coat, where I had a bag ſewed in that was a receptacle for all ſtollen goods. It chanced that the Farmer himſelf was then on the other ſide of the hedge, who undiſcover'd by me, ſaw my activity in the ſtealing of his Hen, and was reſolved, though I put it up, that he would not. But I dreading nothing, thinking my ſelf unſeen, went directly to the Houſe, and as ſoon as I came into the yard fell to my old trade, leaning on my ſtaff, and drawing my leg after me, as if ſcarce able to ſtand, much leſs to run. Having gotten to the door, I began to ſet up my tone with a *Good tender hearted people be pleaſed to beſtow your charity upon a poor miſerable wretch that is both lame and hungry; one penny of ſilver to buy him ſalve for his ſore leg, or one morſel of victuals to put into his belly that hath had nothing come in it this couple of dayes.* No ſooner had I ended my Maunding, thinking to mump the Farmer out of ſome money, or at leaſtwiſe ſome bread to my Hen, but he having watch'd me now ſeiz'd hold of my arm, and told me, that

that though it might be true that I had not lately eaten, yet he ſaw I was reſolved to be better provided for the future, and ſo turning back my Coat diſcover'd my bag, where was not only the Hen, but ſome other provant, I had lately purchaſed. I finding my ſelf caught, would gladly have given him the ſlip, but ſome of his ſervants, as well as himſelf ſtop'd me, without any more ado the *Harman-beck* was ſent for, who being a neighbour was quickly come, and by this time I had a great train of Boys and Girls to attend me: I needed not much examination being thus taken in the manner, but however they were all deſirous to ſee my ſore leg; I was forced to let them do what they would with me, knowing there was no remedy but patience, and ſo I ſuffer'd them to unrowl and take off the Clouts and Rowlers that was upon it, when coming to the skin, that was as whole and as ſound as a fiſh; but though my leg was well and whole, my heart was now almoſt broken with conſideration of what they would do with me; ſome propoſed one puniſhment, and ſome another, but at length to the Whipping-Poſt I was led, where my Doublet and ſhirt being ſtript off, my back was ſo long lac'd with a Cart-whip, that I Caperd and flownced like a Horſe in a quagmire, and I was as faſt too, being hand cuffd ſo that I could not ſtir. It was well it was the ſpring time, for I loſt blood enough to purge away the groſs humors without the help of a Surgeon, that office being ſupplyd by a Thraſher who took as much pains upon me as would have Thraſh'd a buſhel of Peaſe; but at length there was a Ceſſation, and a new parlee began, wherein it was pro-

pounded that further courſe ſhould be taken with me, and conſidering that there was a kind of Felony committed upon the Hen; they advis'd and agreed to lead me to the next Juſtice of the peace to have his Judgement in the Caſe, though I thought it unreaſonable to ſuffer puniſhment firſt, and then to be Judged; yet it was to no purpoſe to complain, and all I could ſay would not prevail with them to let me go, but they would conduct me to the Juſtice, ſo that I having put on my Cloaths my ſhirt ſtuck to my back and made me ſenſible that I had loſt leather; but for all that on I muſt, and the Juſtice living a mile off, the Thraſher who had laſh'd me, and two or three others made holliday to attend me: when we came before the Juſtice, he hearing that I had been puniſhed already, was content at my Importunity to acquit me from any other, and only to make a Paſs to ſend me home to *London*, being the place where I told them I was born: I not having power to contradict, was forced to conſent to what was commanded, and that Conſtable attending me out of his liberties to another Conſtable, left me: this new Conſtable, who now had me in keeping, not being willing to go further with me; for that night put me up in the Cage, where I was lock'd up, but not ſo ſafely, but I made ſhift to break out, and travelling all night, by the next morning I was far enough off for them to o'retake me, for all that day I concealed my ſelf in a wood, and when night came I proceeded on my Journey; but it ſo happened that on the ſecond night of my travel, about midnight I was overtaken by three perſons who demanded

where I was going? I told them any whither: what was I? I replied a wretched perſon whom fortune had perſecuted, and therefore I was indifferent whether I went, or what I did. Hearing me ſay ſo, they retired a little to conſult about their affairs, and then one of them coming up to me, demanded ſeveral queſtions of me of my late courſe of life? To all their queſtions I returned them ſuch anſwers as cauſed them to conclude me to be a Rambler, and therefore fit for their ſociety, and therefore they asked me if I were willing to hazard my ſelf in enterprizing ſomewhat, that though it might be ſomething dangerous, yet it ſhould be very profitable. To this I anſwered, that they ſhould ſoon find my willingneſs expreſſed in the boldneſs of my actions, and if ſeconded or aſſiſted by them, I ſhould act anything they would direct and appoint.

They hearing my reſolution, ſoon conſented to admit me into their ſociety, and acquainted me with their preſent purpoſe, which was to rob a Houſe not far from that place: They told me that I muſt be valiant and bold, not in fighting, for they knew they ſhould meet with little occaſion to exerciſe any weapon, but in entring the Houſe, and performing other ſuch matters as they ſhould inſtruct me in. I told them I conſented to what they ſhould propoſe, and therefore deſired them to tell me what part I was to act in this Enterprize, and as for a part of the purchaſe, I ſhould leave that to them, which I deſired them to give me as I ſhould deſerve. Then one of theſe perſons told me, that he was very well acquainted in the houſe, and gave

me an account of the ſeveral ways and paſſages into every Room, and who was lodged in ſuch Chambers. In fine, I diſcovered that there was but two men, and three women-kind in the houſe, and he being a Coach-man, had lately brought the Maſter of the houſe home with two hundred pound, of which he had a deſire to rob him; and therefore had joyned theſe two perſons with him in the Confederacy. Being thus inſtructed, we proceed, and arriving at the houſe, I was put in at a window, and directed how to open the doors, which I did, the Coach-man ſtayed below ſtairs, and we other three by his directions went up into the Chambers; the doors we ſoon opened, and coming to the Bed-ſide where the Maſter of the houſe and his Wife was, we drawing our ſwords (for I had the Coach-mans delivered to me) opened our dark Lanthorns, and ſeeing the man and woman, without many words we bound and gagg'd them; and they leaving me to watch them, went into the other Chambers to do the like to the reſt: I being left alone in this Room was not idle, but rummaged about, and found a Gold Watch, a few Rings, and twenty Pieces of Gold, theſe I ſecured for my ſelf, and ſoon after my Companions returned; when taking the Keys out of the Gentlewomans pocket, we ſoon found what we came for, the two hundred pound, and ſo marched off without any ſtay, or the leaſt interruption: the Coach-man ſtayed below in the Hall, where he had made a ſtrict ſearch, and had likewiſe plundred ſomething from thence which after turned little to his profit: but we all left the houſe with the doors open, and marched with the

ſpoils of the field, bag and baggage, to a houſe about a mile diſtant, where they were ſo courteous as to give me fifteen pound out of the profits of their Adventure. I (being ſenſible that I was well enough paid, in regard of the Gold and other things I had conceal'd) thankfully received it, and ſo left them, marching on further to the next great Town, where the next day I underſtood a great Fair was to be kept, and therefore I thought that place the moſt fitting to conceal my ſelf in, and be freeſt from ſuſpition, I got in a Barn and reſted my ſelf, taking ſome ſleep; but was much diſturbed, being in great fear leſt ſome miſ-fortune might befall me: And to the end that I might be the freer from ſuſpect, in caſe of a *Hue and Cry*, I went to a Saleſ-mans Booth which was in the Fair, and furniſh'd me with a Sad-coloured Sute and Cloak, Citizen-like, that I might paſs for ſuch a one if occaſion were; my old Cloathes I left behind me in the Barn where I ſtripped my ſelf. Thus did I eſcape all danger, but my Companions fared worſe than I, for the covetous Coach-man not having any thing elſe whereon to exerciſe himſelf, ſtole a Looking-glaſs which was below ſtairs, while we were above, and to conceal it from the reſt of his Companions, put it in his Codpiece. When they had ſufficiently ſtayed at the houſe where I left them, and had ſhared the prize, they went to go homewards, but being fluſtred with the Bottles of Wine they had for joy drank off, they made it ſo long, that it was ſeven of the Clock in the morning ere they parted, and then were they overtaken by the *Hue and Cry*, with a Conſtable, who though he knew the Coach-man very well, and did not

ſuſpect him, yet ſeeing him and his two Companions ſo fluſtred, and ſomewhat to hang out at the knees of the Coach-man's Breeches, they made ſome ſtay, asking whether he had lately been at ſome Wedding and had Bride-Laces, which he had put in his Breeches. The Coach-man being ſomewhat blank'd at this diſcovery, knew not what anſwer readily to return: This cauſed them to examine him who they were that were his Companions, and where they had been? They were all now deeplier ſurprized than before, which gave ſo great ſuſpition that occaſioned a Search, and in the end they found what they ſought for, (the Money:) and that which hung out at the Coach-mans Breeches, were ſome Ribbons that were faſtned to the Looking-glaſs. Upon this Diſcovery they were all Apprehended, carried before a Juſtice, and upon examination being found directly guilty, committed to Goal. This did I hear of at the Fair that afternoon as I was drinking in a Booth: At the recital of this ſtory, if any one had obſerved me, they might eaſily have conjectured that I was concerned therein; for I was poſſeſſed with ſo much fear, that I look'd like one rather dead than alive: but there was no occaſion to ſuſpect me, for the three others my Companions being taken and with them the greateſt part of the money, there was no occaſion to make any further enquiry. Then did I bleſs my good fortune that I had left them ſo ſuddenly, and was ſo much out of danger, and that evening I proceeded further on in my way towards *London*; but being well furniſhed with Silver and Gold, I took up my Quarters in a very good Inn,

where I had a good Supper and ſoft Bed, and ſlept very well, conſidering the trouble I was in. At this Inn I ſtayed ſeveral days to hear what would become of my Companions, for the Aſſizes were then at hand. I received this ſatisfaction, that they being Tryed, were all caſt for their Lives; the Coach-man hang'd, and the other two were to be tranſported. This was the end of my piece of Thievery, and I did then reſolve never to hazard my ſelf again in ſuch matters, leſt I came off with as bad ſucceſs as the Coach-man. I ſtayed ſo long in this Inn, pretending to wait the coming of a ſiſter of mine, that one day who ſhould arrive there but the Maid-ſervant who lived with the Plaiſterer I had ſerved, and as I ſuppoſe was the cauſe of his drowning: now was I in greater fear than before, for I had lately eſcaped hanging for theft, and now expected it for murther; and I knew that this wench was malicious enough againſt me, and would rather injure me by her exclamations, than ſecure me by her ſilence; I therefore intended to give her the go-by, but could not, for ſhe had now caſt her eye upon me and diſcovered me, and came ſtraight up to me to ſpeak with me. How now, ſays ſhe, you have made a fair Ramble! Is it not time to return? Well, ſaid I, be ſilent a little, and let me ſpeak with you in private; and thereupon taking her by the hand, I led her into a private room, where calling for ſome drink, I enquired of her how all our Friends did, and more particularly for my Maſter. Why, ſaid ſhe, you know well enough that he is dead. At this word I was more dead

than alive, neither was I for the preſent able to ask her any more queſtions.

The Drink being brought in, ſhe drank to me; Well, ſaid ſhe, however I am glad to ſee you here; ſo am not I (thought I:) but recovering my loſt ſenſes, I demanded of her how long my Maſter had been dead. She replyed, a fortnight. Nay, thought I, then the Caſe is not ſo bad as I ſuſpected, and therefore I proceeded in queſtioning of her how he died, and many other queſtions. She anſwered, that he died of a Feaver, which kept him not above fourteen days ſick; and he being dead, ſhe was now returning into the Country to viſit her Friends.

Now was I fully ſatisfied that I needed not fear any danger, wherefore I called for a Bottle of Canary, which we drank off; and ſhe related to me that he was not much hurt by the fall that I gave him, for he went again to work the next day, and had made much enquiry after me, but as yet in vain. I told her that I indeed doubted that he had been drowned by the fall which he had received into the water, and therefore had abſented my ſelf ever ſince from *London*, wandering up and down in ſeveral Diſguiſes: But, ſaid I, I will now go to *London* again, but never to ſerve out my Time at that Trade; for if I come upon a Scaffold again, I ſhall be much frighted with the remembrance of that Diſaſter. She told me, that now indeed I was free to diſpoſe of my ſelf ſince my Maſter was dead, and might chuſe my Trade and Maſter.

Thus did we ſpin out ſeveral hours of that day and night together, till it was time to go to Bed,

and then we parted; ſhe the next morning proceeded in her Journey into the Countrey, and I purſuing my reſolutions of going to *London*, likewiſe went forward. But by the way met with an Adventure, which I ſhall relate to you in the next Chapter.

CHAP. XVII.

In his Journey to London, *he overtakes a Trooper and a Wench: he lyes with her and two more of her Companions, and after this frollick he goes with them all to* London.

I Was now reſolved nothing ſhould hinder me from proceeding in my Journey to *London*, and that I might get thither the ſooner, I endeavoured to borrow a horſe, but could not procure one, I being a ſtranger, every perſon was unwilling to truſt me: but at noon-day ſtaying for a bait, I happened into the company of a Trooper, who was likewiſe travelling to *London*; we dined together, and he asking whither I was going? I told him: he ſaid he ſhould be glad of my company. I ſaid, that would be very pleaſing to me if I might enjoy his; but I could not becauſe he was better furniſh'd for a Journey than I, being provided with a horſe, and I on foot: he told me that inconveniency might be ſupplyed, for there were horſes in the ſtable to be let. I told him that I would give any conſideration for the hire of one, and that he, if acquainted, might do me much kindneſs in procuring one for me: he ſeeing me

full of money, quickly procured me a horſe, engaging himſelf that I ſhould leave the beaſt at his *London* quarters. My hoſt being well acquainted with him, and he being to ride along with me, was contented: and I paying five ſhillings for his hire, had the horſe deliver'd to me, and on his back I mounted, thinking my felf to be ſome brave fellow: As we rid along together, we overtook a female Creature, young and handſom, in ſomewhat an ancient decayed, but Gentile garb. The Trooper being a notable well experienced blade, ſoon fell into diſcourſe with her, and found her to be a Rambling Baggage, whoſe journey was now intended for *London*, and would be glad of our company, were ſhe accommodated with a horſe: to that I offered her my ſervice, and agreed that ſhe ſhould ride behind me; to which ſhe aſſenting, ſoon mounted, and now we merrily put on, holding a pleaſing diſcourſe with our female companion. I had a great deſire to take a better view of her than I could, being thus on horſ-back together, and therefore perſwaded the Trooper to make a halt at the next Town which we came to, where we all diſmounted, and I ſaluted my Lady, who kindly received my Courteſie. The Trooper after ſome diſcourſe, was well enough acquainted with the Lady, having often times been merry with her, and others, at the houſe where ſhe lodged in *London*. He call'd me on one ſide, and told me, that ſhe was a perſon with whom he had been formerly acquainted, and ſo might I too, if I would, and if I had any deſire thereto, he could and would aſſiſt me.

I told him he had done me many kindneſſes in

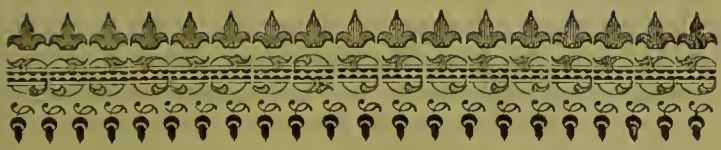
the ſmall time of my acquaintance, and now he had offered that which exceeded all; for indeed I was much taken with her beauty, and very deſirous I was to enjoy her.

Well, ſaid he, let us be going from hence, and make you your bargain with her as you ride along by the way, and I will take ſuch care in the buſineſs that you ſhall be entertained as man and wife at my quarters, and there lie together. I was infinitely glad of this his kind proffer, and thankfully accepted thereof, and ſo after ſome little longer ſtay, we again mounted our ſteeds and put forwards: according to his inſtruction I courted my Miſtreſs, and without much difficulty obtained her promiſe to permit me to lie with her, and ſo we rid on till we arrived at the Troopers quarters, where he told his Landlady, that he had brought her ſome gueſts; for this young man and his wife, (ſaid he) pointing to us, will ſtay here all night: they ſhall be welcom, ſaid the Hoſteſs, and ſo a ſupper was provided; for as we did eat and drink with a very good appetite, and my Landlady did accompany us, who I found was very well reſpected, and familiar with the Trooper; and bed-time being come, which I had much deſired, I and my Lady went to bed, neither did the Trooper lie alone, for our Landlady was his bed-fellow; how he ſpent the night I know not, but I am ſure for our parts we ſlept but little, for it was the firſt time that I ever enjoy'd a woman naked in my arms all night, and I was raviſhed with delight, never having had ſo much pleaſure. My bed-fellow was well enough contented with the entertainment I gave her; we

diſcourſed of one anothers fortunes, but whether ſhe told me the truth of hers, I know not, but I diſguiſed mine wholly from her, not thinking it fit to make her acquainted with my late adventures; ſhe told me, that the occaſion of her late travel was this, that ſhe and two women more of her acquaintance had been perſwaded by three Gentlemen to a Ramble, and had gone down to ſuch a City in a Coach, that they had for ſome time continued together as three men and wives at an Inn, and there had enjoyed a full plenty of every thing; but at length the three Gentlemen had baſely left them to pay a great reckoning in a ſtrange place, and all they had would not make the one half of it, that they had for ſome time waited in expectation of the return of their friends, but in vain, ſo that at laſt it was agreed, that one of us, ſaid ſhe, ſhould go for *London*, and procure mony to redeem the reſt, and the lot falling on me I have proſecuted the journey, and hopes to raiſe money to relieve, and redeem my companions. I hearing this ſtory was ſenſibly troubled thereat, and offered her my aſſiſtance, and ſhe ſo far prevail'd with me, that I lent her five pound to ſend to her companions, ſhe promiſing me to continue either there, or at any other place with me ſo long as I ſhould pleaſe, and at our coming to her quarters at *London*, to repay me my mony with many thanks. To all this I agreed, and the next day ſhe conveyed moſt part of the mony to her companions by a Coach that travelled thither: and thus did I enjoy this Lady for many nights together, and lying at Rack and Manger: the horſe I ſent back at the directions of the

Trooper, who likewife continued with his Hofteſs, and only my purſe paid for all; but indeed we lived ſparingly enough, the Trooper being one of the honeſteſt Travellers that I ever met with. The Coach-man who carried the money to the afflicted and diſtreſſed Damoyſelles, returned, and with him the Ladies, very glad of their ſafe return, and very thankful were they, not only to their companions who ſent it, but alſo to me of whom, ſhe ſaid, ſhe procured it, and now we all thought of removeing to *London*, but one night more we lay at our old quarters, where I had the greateſt ſrollick I was ever guilty of, for that night I kiſt with all three of the women, and pleaſed them round, by giving each of them a tryal of my skill. What now could I deſire to enjoy further? I thought my ſelf to be as brave a fellow as the great Turk in his *Seraglio*, he having but his choice of Women, which I now enjoyed to my full content. But morning coming, we took leave of our Hoſtefs and the Trooper, and all four taking Coach, ſoon came to *London*, where I took up my Quarters with my three Damſels, who made very much of me, and indeed they were the honeſteſt Wenches, and I had the beſt ſrollick that I ever had in my life, but in time I was weary of this liſe, for what man can laſt out alwayes? And I finding my pocket begin to ſhrink, bethought me that it was fit to leave off in time, for all my Silver was gone, and ten pound of my twenty pound in Gold: but I ſelling my Watch and Rings raiſed ten pound more; with this ſtock of twenty pound I was reſolved to retire, and fit my ſelf for ſome employment. My three Ladies never

offered to return me the five pound I had lent them, neither indeed could I handſomly expect it; for they had been very liberal in their expences, and had declined all other company to accommodate me. They heard of their three Gentlemen who had trapan'd them in the Country, and ſo wiſely plaid their Cards that they gained all their money again, I aſſiſting them, and pretending the man of the houſe had aſſigned the money to me. I ſcorned to pocket any of it, but gave it amongſt them; and ſo being reſolved to take another courſe of life, I retired my ſelf from them: and to the end that I might be fitted for an employment, I hired one who was well known therein, to teach me to write more perfectly than I could formerly, as alſo Arithmatick: I likewiſe hired ſeveral Books of a Stationer, for which I gave him ſo much *per* week; Theſe being chiefly Knight-Errantry and Romances, I took much pleaſure therein. I had a mind to diverſion, and went to viſit my Damoyſelles, and thus did I live the pleaſanteſt life in the world; but I had ſo much reaſon as to think that things would not laſt long as they were, and I had no inclination to ſtealing, more virtuous thoughts had now poſſeſſed me, and therefore a Trade being the only thing that would maintain me, I enquired for one, and ſetled my ſelf, as you ſhall hear in the next Chapter.



CHAP. XVIII.

He being now come to London, *puts himſelf Prentice to a Taylor; he gets acquaintance with Prentices of all ſorts, is with them at their Tavern-frolicks: he is employed by a Scrivener to make Cloathes for a Wench, he goes with him to her, aud returning, the Scrivener promiſes him an account of that Trade.*

BEing now come to *London*, I was reſolved not to be idle, but ſettle my ſelf to ſome one Trade, that I might be able to get a living; and having already had tryal of ſeveral, at firſt a *Barber-Surgeon*, then a *Tapſter*, a *Cook*, a *Lock-ſmith*, *Taylor*, *Baker*, and *Plaiſterer;* and being ſtill forced for ſome reaſon or other to leave them all, did now reſolve to fix upon one that ſhould do my buſineſs, and whereby I might at all times, and in all places, be able to live by my hands, for Lands I had none. I conſidered of all the Trades I had already been a practitioner in, and many others, none ſuited ſo well with my humour, as that of a Taylor; wherefore I ſought for ſeveral Maſters, but they were all unwilling to take me for leſs than ſeven years, it being the cuſtom of *London* that none can be bound for

leſs time, nor be made a Free-man till they have ſerved ſo long. I was unwilling to bind my ſelf on thoſe tearms, knowing my temper was variable, and did believe, I ſhould not hold out to ſerve ſuch a tearm: but after ſeveral enquiries and tryals, I did light upon a Maſter, who was willing to take me for five years, only this I perſwaded him to do in regard I already had a good hand in working, and being induſtrious in my imployment, ſo that though I was bound for ſeven years, yet I had a Writing under my Maſters hand, that the laſt two years I ſhould diſpoſe of my ſelf as I pleaſed, and yet he could make me a Free-man at ſeven years end.

My Maſter was not only a Taylor, but kept a Brokers ſhop, wherein he ſold all ſorts of Clothes new and old: He lived in one of the principalleſt Streets in the City, and was in good eſteem with his neighbours, who were all perſons of ſome quality, not of the meaner ſort, but ſubſtantial Tradeſmen, as *Gold-ſmiths*, *Grocers*, *Drugſters*, *Scriveners*, *Stationers*, &c. and I (being now well fitted with Clothes, and having my pockets pretty well lined with money which I had ſtill kept by me) was a fit and welcome Companion to the beſt ſort of Apprentices, in whoſe ſociety I did ſoon inſinuate my ſelf, and having money to ſpend equal with the beſt, I came acquainted with a whole Gang of ſuch Blades, that all my former knowledge was nothing in compariſon to what I ſoon experimented from them; for their Maſters being of the wealthieſt ſort of Citizens, and keeping Countrey-houſes at *Newington*, *Hackney*, *Stepney*, &c, they often had opportunity in their

abſence to meet, and keep their Club or general Randezvous, which was commonly every other night, at one of the Taverns near adjoyning: and my Maſter (who did well enough underſtand that I was frequently abroad, and in what Company I ſpent my time) did not in the leaſt oppoſe or contradict me therein; for I ſoon found that theſe young Jovial Blades, though Apprentices, yet they were my Maſters beſt Cuſtomers, for there was none of them but had a Sute or two of Clothes *A la mode*, which commonly lay at our houſe, which they put on when they had any frollick out of Town, either at *Chriſtmas*, *Eaſter*, or *Whitſontide*, or at any other time, when they pretending ſome urgent occaſions, they would give their Maſters the ſlip.

Thus was I one of the Gang, and had liberty to be with them ſo often as I pleaſed, by the connivance of my Maſter, whoſe profit conſiſted in my acquaintance with them; for I ſoon brought him ſome new Cuſtomers, out of whom he could ſqueez good ſtore of money for making their Clothes, and ſometimes he made three or four Sutes at a time, yet had no money for his pains, but he was ſatisfied otherwiſe in Commodities, which were more to his profit; for the Mercer paid his Bill in Stuffs, the Draper in Cloth, and the reſt either in other good Commodities which they had of their Maſters, or with which they were furniſhed by their Companions. When any of them intended a new Sute for himſelf, Friend, or Miſtreſs, it was but ſummoning the Brethren of the Club together, and then the Mercer brought his Stuffs or Silks, the Milliner Buttons,

Ribbons, and Lynings, for which they had in exchange ſuch other Commodities as the others could produce: there was only two Trades that had little or no Commodities to exchange, and that was the Scrivener and Bookſeller, and therefore I wondred from whence they ſhould get to be ſo fine as the reſt; but I obſerved what they wanted in Wares, was ſupplyed in Money, which was a Commodity would command every thing elſe. How they ſhould get this Money I knew not, for I could not imagine that in making of Bills and Bonds the Scrivener could cheat his Maſter of much money, or that the Bookſeller could ſell many books by the by, and put the money in his own pockets, for I knew they were not ſo vendible a Commodity as Cloath, Silk, *&c.*

But one evening we being at our general Rendezvous, where we had good wine, and better company, being attended by two or three Suburbian Females, who were the Doxies of our Comerades. The Scrivener (having the fineſt out-ſide, being in his private Sute of Apparel, and having his pockets well lined with *Maſlin* of Gold and Silver) took occaſion to court one of the Women not only publickly, but privately; and though ſhe were till then a ſtranger to him, yet he won her from her other Friend, and to enduce her to be kind to him, he called me to him, and ordered me to provide her a new gown, and peticoat, of flowred Tabbee, and immediatly calling to our Mercer who ſerved us all, gave him as much money as the Silk was worth, and all the engagement he deſired from the *Bona Roba*, was that he might have the firſt

taking up of the peticoat, and then if ſhe liked her old ſweet-heart beſt ſhe might afterwards uſe her pleaſure, either in admitting him or t'other to her embraces, or either of them as ſhe pleaſed, to this they all three agreed, and the Mercer who took about four pound for Silk was ordered (by a general vote) to ſpend forty ſhillings of the money for that preſent reckoning, and all the reſt went ſcotfree, and after a luſty cup of wine, ſome diſhes of meat, and fidlars, they for that time broke up their meeting. This liberallity, or rather prodigallity of the Scrivener put me into ſome confuſion, and very deſirous I was to know how he gained ſo much money, wherefore I ſpeedily procured the apparrel to be made, and delivered it to him to his content, I ſo highly pleaſed him that he deſired me to go with him to the Ladies lodging who was to wear it. I accordingly waited on him thither, and ſhe receiving him with much chearfulneſs accepted it; it was ſoon put on, and it was not long before they retired out of the room wherein I was, into an other; where I ſuppoſe ſhe was ſo curteous as to permit him not only to take up the peticoat, and ſomewhat elſe to his liking: but to diſpoſe of her at his pleaſure, for they ſtay'd together neer an hour. Neither was I left alone: but had the old Matron of the houſe, and a young *Bona Roba* to accompany me, where we were not idle, but made the bottles of Sack, and Stepony fly for it: when their buſineſs was over (and ours almoſt done, for we had ſo ply'd the liquor that our noddles were fuller of wine than wit) they briskly entred the room where we were, and without any coyneſs fell ſtoutly to drinking; for ſeeing us neer

thirty one, they with full bowls quickly put us out, ſo that I was enforced to go to ſleep, which I ſuppoſed I did for about three hours, and then awaking I found my Gallants wanting; but I believe they were not all at that time idle; for upon inquiry, and ſearch, I found them in an other chamber together, where I ſuppoſe ſhe had fully performed the agreement for her cloaths to the content of the Scrivener, who now after a freſh bottle of wine, and payment of the reckoning which was no ſmall one, hearty farewels given, and taken of his Miſtreſs, her companion, and the Matron, we left that houſe, and taking coach ordered the Coach-man to drive to the next Tavern to my Maſter, where we called for a room, wine, and a fire, he gave me an Angel for my dayes ſervice, and ſhifting himſelf put on his ordinary, and gave me his beſt cloathes to lay up at my Maſters, wiſhing me to acquaint him that I had been in his company, and that would be ſufficient for my excuſe: I thanked him for his kindneſs, and Civility, and told him that his bounty had ſo tyed me to him, that I ſhould at all times be joyful if I might ſerve him: As for my bounty, ſaid he, I ſhall for the future be more free to you, and for mony you ſhall not want; for I am alwayes in capacity to furniſh my friends, having the command of a great deal of caſh, which I know well enough how to order to my own advantage, and it is but reaſon that I ſhould diſpoſe of ſome as well as my Maſter; for it is in my power to ſtrip him of the greateſt part of his eſtate, and ruine him in his credit. I being inquiſitive after ſecrets, deſired him to tell me how

that Trade (which I ſuppoſed, only conſiſted in the making a few ſmall writings) could be ſo profitable: To this he anſwered, that indeed it was true, they made not many writings, but dealt in much money, and his Maſter had an extraordinary way; for (perſued he) if my Maſter wants two or three thouſand pound, he can quickly command it, though he began with nothing, and indeed had every Bird her feather, he hath no eſtate: But he hath ſuch ſlights, wayes, and confederates, that he can do what he liſteth: He hath one piece of Braſs hath yielded him two thouſand pound: that is much, ſaid I, and there muſt be more in your Trade than I can imagine, and I would be very glad to be acquainted with ſome of your Myſteries, and ſince you have promiſed me your friendſhip, whatever you ſhall relate to me, ſhall be ſurely and ſafely cloſeted up in my breaſt, and ſhall never by me be offered to your prejudice, and it may be ſome of my advice in your affairs may be profitable; for I have had much more experience in the world than you imagine. This diſcourſe, and ſome other arguments which I uſed, induced him to give me a relation of many paſſages of his life: But much of the *Knaveries* of that myſterious Trade, which diſcourſe he began to me in this manner.

CHAP. XIX.

The Scrivener recounts the Waggeries he committed the firſt three years of his Apprenticeſhip, and his Maſters firſt Cheats by counterfeiting a Seal.

WHen I firſt came to Prentice, my Maſter (by reaſon of the Wars, which cauſed a general deadneſs in Trading) had but little to do: but he being one of the confiding party, did thereby get acquaintance with ſeveral rich men, and in ſhort time by reaſon of the pretended ſanctity, was entruſted by a Uſurer to put out five hundred pound, which he did to his content; for he had a Leaſe of a City Companies which coſt ſeven hundred pound aſſigned for ſecurity. My Maſter never having dealt in money before, and now finding the ſweetneſs of *Procuration*, and making of writings, longed to be at it again: but though he had moneys offered him to put out, yet he could not meet with any ſecurity to content; for perſonal ſecurity by reaſon of the caſualty of the Wars, was generally diſliked, and Land in the Country was for the ſame reaſon refuſed, and only

Leafes in *London*, or Lands about *London*, was counted fufficient and approved of, wherefore this Companies Leafe, on which he had procured monies did run much in his head, wifhing for fuch another fecurity, and projecting fomewhat, which fince he had put in execution, as I will tell you by and by: but I will firft acquaint you how I behaved my felf for the firft three years of my time, whereby my Mafter took fo good a liking to me, as to communicate his fecrets to me. My Mafter was alwayes good natur'd, and kind to me: but on the contrary, my Miftris was crofs and froward, fo that I could feldome get a good word from her, and fhe would ftill employ me in feveral pieces of drudgery, as to carry burthens from *London* to our Countrey Houfe, and then I muft bring back from thence fletten or skim'd Milk, on which we muft feed two or three daies in the week, when my Mafter would allow good roaft Beef, which fhe would fend for away: but I was ftill even with her for her niggardlinefs, and when I came to the Country Houfe, I would ufually get my fhare of the Cream; and being a lover of the Pies and Puddings, fteal fome from her. One time I being in the Larder, had a great mind to a bak'd-pudding that was there, but at firft durft not meddle with it, becaufe it was with other good cheer to be ferved up at the Table to Dinner, where were fome guefts: but for all that, the lovlinefs of the Pudding made me to take my knife, and turning it upfide down, cut out one half of it, and fo turning it down again, left it to be ferved hollow to the Table: but I departing for *London* e're Dinner was ferved, I know not

how the Maides came off. At other times when I came to the Countrey Houſe, if the fruit of the Orchard were ripe, then the gate was lock'd, and I was not admitted therein, but I would have my ſhare by day or night; for I once invited ſome of my Confederates to Church thither on a Sunday, and in the Sermon time went with them and rob'd our own Orchard, which no body elſe durſt attempt becauſe of our Maſtiff; nay, I went once from *London* at midnight, and having ſome of my Copeſmates with me I entred the Orchard, and fetcht out the fruit which I would be ſure ſhould be of the beſt, and choiceſt of all the ground, and gave it to my Companions, and ſo we returned loaden to *London*; and thus did I vex her for her niggardlineſs, and although my Maſter did well enough ſuſpect me, yet he would only laugh at my Miſtriſs when ſhe was moſt paſſionately angry, and ſay, ſhe was but rightly ſerved. But at length my Maſter had a Son, who when I firſt came to Prentice was at Boarding-School: but in time growing up, his Mother had a great deſire to have him live at home and be a Clerk: for my Maſters employment encreaſing, I gained moneys, and bought me ſome fine Cloathes, and wore a Watch in my pocket: at all which ſhe was envious, and deſirous that her Son might enjoy what I did, and therefore bound he was to his Father, and though this happened three years after I came, yet ſuch was the injuſtice that I had done me, that he was not only placed before me in a ſeat, but I was commanded to make clean his ſhooes, and attend him, as if he had not been a Servant. This though I was forced to comply with, yet I was reſolved

to be revenged of, and therefore fet my wits to work; I did clean his ſhoos, but in the edges inſtead of greazing them, I anointed them with *Aqua fortis*, and he putting them on, and going to the further end of *London*, the ſoles of the ſhoos fell from the Upper-leathers, they being ſo eaten by the *Aqua fortis*, and he ſate at the Coblers ſtall whilſt they were randed together again. He was of ſo covetous a diſpoſition (like his Mother) that though he had moneys in his pocket, yet he would ſeldom ſpend any at the Ale-houſe, and therefore ſate at the Coblers ſtall two hours, whilſt his ſhoos were made fit for him to walk with, and then he came home and was ſoundly chidden by his Father, my Maſter, for his ſo long ſtay, which pleaſed me very well that he ſhould be blamed for that fault whereof he had been ſo often guilty. He being of a ſneaking peering humor, I could not be quiet for complaints he made of me, and by his applying himſelf cloſe to his buſineſs, he would diſpatch as much writing as I did: though I could when I liſted, do twice as much in the time, and when he had done, he would be making and mending his Pens ready againſt buſineſs came in, but I would ſpoil all his Pens by cutting one neb of them away ſomewhat ſhorter than the other, ſo that when he came to write, he had his Pens to mend or new make, and ſo curious he was, that his Ink muſt be in a particular Standiſh by its ſelf, whereto I would often put Oyl, ſo that it would not write; and then for his Parchment, he would chooſe the beſt skins, and give me the worſt being greaſie: but I would in his abſence greaze his Parchment by rubbing it with

a Candles end. Many other inventions I had to hinder and croſs him, I found two pair of his Gloves one time, and beſtowed ſome Cow-lich in all the ſeams on the inſide of them, ſo that he putting them on, his hands quickly fell to itching, and he to ſcratching, till they were all bloudy, and ſo hot, that he was forced to put them in a pail of water, and then he cut his Gloves in pieces, that he might ſee what was in the inſide, which was no ſmall pleaſure to me. He being a trouble and vexation to my fellow-ſervants as well as to me, they aſſiſted me in my waggeries and contrivances againſt him. In his Mothers abſence at the Countrey Houſe, he kept the key of the Cupboard and Buttery, to hinder us from the better ſort of Victuals, but I ſoon got another key, and had my full ſhare of every thing, and when miſſed any thing, perſwaded him, the Rats and Mice bereft him of it. When my Miſtriſs came to Town ſhe would have her Lodging in the Chamber over the Kitching, becauſe ſhe would hear if we ſit up after her; it was a good while er'e I could think of a way to cauſe her to remove her Lodging, but underſtanding that ſhe could not endure Rats and Mice, I got a great dead Rat, and in the day-time put it into her bed between the ſheets, ſo that ſhe opening her bed to go into it, and ſeeing the Rat, was ſo extreamly affrighted, that ſhe immediately left her Lodging, and went into another Chamber: but ſhe doubting that we would ſit up a nights after ſhe was gone to bed, as indeed we often did, in Company of her Daughter, who was ſomewhat better condition'd than her Brother, and had many

Junkets and Collations; ſhe called her Son to watch, and he being willing to catch us, would come down part of the ſtairs ſoftly in his ſhirt to liſten: but we diſcerning his practice, ſtrewed the ſtairs with peaſe, and nointed the edges with ſoap, ſo that one night down he fell backwards, and almoſt brake his Rib with the fall, and gave us timely notice to ſhift away for our ſelves: his Mother hearing the noiſe, comming down her ſelf to help him, was ſerved in the ſame kind, I hearing of this, and all being dark, ran in my ſhirt and Breeches as if newly awaked, and inſtead of helping them, went to the ſtairs and wip'd and rub'd them, and conveyed away moſt of the peaſe, ſo that my Maſter by this time being likewiſe up, and having a candle, did not diſtruſt how they had been ſerved, but helping them up, and I aſſiſting my young Maſter to go to his bed, the next day he concluded the Houſe was haunted by Spirits: By this means we were rid of his watchings; for after he was once in his Chamber of a night, he ſeldom came out again to watch us. But he would commonly ſtay in the Kitchin till he ſaw us all going to bed, neither would he permit me to come to the fire, upon which account we had a buſſel, and I gave my Gentleman ſuch a fall, that cauſed him to remember a good while after: but his Mother remembred me the next morning, for he having acquainted her with the matter, ſhe took upon her to revenge it, which ſhe did in this manner. I according to cuſtom coming to the Ciſtern for water, to water the ſhop before I ſwept it, having one finger of one hand in the hole at the bottom of the bottle, and my

t'other hand being employed in holding the bottle, and being ſtooping at the Cock of the Ciſtern my Miſtreſs came near me, and there ſtanding by me in a Tub a parcel of durty clouts wherewith the maids had newly waſhed down the ſtairs, ſhe takes them up and flaps them about my face, ſo that I looked as durty as a Chimney-ſweeper; and not contented therewith, ſhe jouled my head againſt the Ciſtern: I thereupon ſtanding upright, and feling my ſelf wet, faced her, who now opening her mouth, made a great noiſe with her paſſionate exclamations againſt me for abuſing her Son; I let her goe on in her diſcourſe, and apprehending a way to be even with her, coming very near her, let my finger go from the bottom of the bottle, and holding it over her, it ran all upon her, ſo that ſhe then having a great belly ſoon felt her ſelf to wet through, and then ſhe would have been at me again, but I ſhewed her a fair pair of heels, and ran away. Thus was I ſtill even with them both, and my Maſter would ſeldom do any thing but laugh at what I did, taking much notice of my unhappy wit; for let her and her Son do all they could, I would be ſure to have my ſhare of the beſt ſort of the Victuals; and ſhe was of that dirty humor, that at a *Chriſtmas* when ſhe made a Feaſt, and a great deal of good chear was dreſt for her gueſts, ſhe would then afford us nothing but a diſh of ſtew'd Turneps, Milk, Pottage, or at the beſt, a leg of Beef; and though much Victuals were left in Platters, and on Trenchers, that ſhe beſtowed on the Water-bearer or Chair-woman, that they might report what a brave Houſe ſhe kept, and not

a bit was given to us his Servants, unleſs ſhe had kept it ſo long till it was mouldy or worſe. Once I remember ſhe promiſed us ſome Plumb-Pottage, and at the time ſhe made two pots full, I asking the maid wherefore ſo much was made? ſhe informed me, that one pot-full was much better than the other; I being told which was the beſt when my Maſter and Miſtreſs were at Dinner, got a good Baſon full of the beſt, and ſet it by for my ſelf, and then mixed the reſt ſo, ſo that we had all alike. But to lay aſide all theſe fooleries, and now to the purpoſe, my Maſter perceiving me of a pretty ſmart wit, and fit for his purpoſe, he employed me in getting of a Seal made, the which I did, and it was like unto the Companies, which I told you was to the writing, upon which we lent 500*l.* He did not tell me the uſe of it at preſent, but I ſoon found it out; for not long after a Deed was made, and the Seal being put to it, my Maſter cauſed one who was his Confederate to bring it to our ſhop at ſuch a time as he had a Uſurer in his company who wanted ſecurity for moneys. In comes our Gentleman, and calling my Maſter aſide, asked him if he could procure 500*l.* upon ſuch a Companies Leaſe? Yes reply'd my Maſter if it be a good one; whereupon the Leaſe was produced, and the Uſurer being there preſent look'd on it, and liked it ſo well, that he agreed to lend 400*l.* upon it: This at firſt would not pleaſe the Gentleman, becauſe he pretended he was to pay 500*l.* but the value of the Leaſe being counted and reckoned at no more than 600*l.* he was contented at my Maſters perſwaſions to accept of 400*l.* upon that ſecurity,

and my Maſter promiſed him to furniſh him with a 100*l.* more on his Bond of another perſon, a friend of his. Thus this buſineſs was made up, and aſſignment or mortgage being made of this Leaſe, the money was paid, and my Maſter as I ſoon underſtood, had 350*l.* thereof, and the Gentleman 50*l.* and I was likewiſe rewarded with twenty ſhillings, which the Gentleman gave me. Thus ſaid the Scrivener, was my Maſter firſt beginnings in Cheating, which indeed was but ſmall to theſe many great ones, which he ſoon after acted; of which you ſhall have an account in the next Chapter.

CHAP. XX.

He discourses of several of his Masters Cheats, whereby he gets his Estate.

WIth this Stock of 350 *l.* my Master set up all his *Knaveries*, and being unwilling to venture it all in one bottom, he lent a 100 *l.* of it in small sums to House-keepers, which they paid again by the week, and gave him at least 40 *l. per Cent.* for the use of it; for if he lent five pound, they paid it by five shillings *per* week, and had but four pound ten shillings for their money, and my Master making the Bond in another mans name, he had commonly five shillings, and sometimes ten shillings for *Procuration*, and sometimes I had a shilling or two: thus did he dispose of some. Others he lent upon *Bommeree*, which was thus: If he lent ten pound, he was to have fifteen pound for it on such a day, or the return of such a ship, which should first happen; and though there was no such ship in the world came home, yet the time would come, and then it must be paid; and this being counted an adventure, he could take what interest he pleased, as it is customary with Merchants to venture upon *Bottomrie;* that is, on the bottom or keel of the ship and then for security of payment of

the money, though the ſhip ſhould miſcarry, they are wont to infure it at the Infurance-Office; but my Maſter needed no fuch charge or trouble for infuring any ſhip, for he was fure the day would come, though the ſhip never did; and thus did he make forty or fifty pound in the hundred: but he being once bit and fued in equity, afterwards took a more ſtrict courſe, for he ſeldom lent any money thus, but he would include in the Condition of the Bond a warrant to confefs a Judgement, upon default of payment: and to be fure when the time came, and the money not paid, he filed his Bond, which was warrant to confefs Judgement, and thereby obtained a *Scieri facias*, to take execution on the body or goods of the debtor, who little dreamt thereof, and then he feized all the penalty, to the undoing of fome; and he feldome lent unto any, but he had two or three bound for fecurity, and that he might not be blamed nor fued, he made his Bonds and Judgements in the name of one who was his Confederate, and was was a Prifoner in the Kings-Bench, fo that when the penalty was recovered, it was to no purpofe to ſue him. And by degrees being now in Credit, and having moneys of other perfons to difpofe of, he would feldome lend any but upon morgages, becaufe under the pretence of being paid for writings (which he would be fure to make large enough) he would fometimes take five pound for procuring a hundred, and fay, though indeed ſix *per Cent* was as much as his friend the Ufurer would take, yet he was forced every ſix moneths to prefent him with ſomewhat that ſhould be equal to eight pound *per Cent*, and withal, that he was

at charge not only to imploy one at firſt to enquire of the Security, but he was at the charge of a Coach to go to ſee the eſtate, and then he will reckon ſo much for his pains, ſo much for loſs of time, ſo much for writings, and ſo much for expences, and ſo much for expedition, and all this muſt be deducted out of the money: when the ſix moneths came that the money was due, then he muſt have the intereſt, and ſo much for *Continuation*; and this was a courteſie if he let them go ſo: but if the borrower came not, and readily at the time brought the intereſt and *Continuation*-money, he had ſeveral wayes to bring them in, for ſuddenly a *Declaration* of Ejectment was drawn up and delivered to the Tenant or Tenants in poſſeſſion of the premiſes, who being frighted at the matter, preſently goes to the Landlord, who ſenſible of the matter, hies him to us. If this will not do, then an Officer is feed to enter an Action and Arreſt the Borrower, who then is forced to come and comply upon extraordinary diſadvantageous terms; for after much entreaty, my Maſter may be perſwaded to continue it, the intereſt-money being paid, as alſo *Continuation*-money, charge of *Declarations* of Ejectment (for which we will rekon five or ten ſhillings paid to an Attorney, though it were done by my Maſter, or me by his command) it may be twenty ſhillings, or forty ſhillings, for the Arreſt, though it may be not above half a Crown was paid for it; and then there muſt be at leaſt twenty ſhillings, or forty ſhillings, to my Maſter for his pains, and if the borrower be not willing to pay all this charge, then will my Maſter fee an Attorney in earneſt,

and proceed upon the *Declaration* of Ejectment, and in ſhort time get the poſſeſſion of the eſtate: and thus put the poor borrower to ten pound charge, and if he refuſe to pay this, he ſhall fair worſe; for although in equity the lender of the money can hold the premiſes no longer in his hands than till he is paid his Debt, Intereſt, and charges out of the rent, yet my Maſter will ſo order the matter, that the borrower ſhall never have the eſtate again; for (pretending that the lender wanted his money, and was forced to ſell the eſtate to raiſe it) he will paſs it away to another, a Confederate, for the bare money, intereſt, and charges that is due on it, or it may be, five or ten pound more; and this is all the poor borrower can get in equity, which will coſt him more the recovering than it is worth. Thus have we often had an eſtate worth two hundred pound, for only fifty pound and intereſt, and the poor borrower is forced to be quiet, not having any remedy. When an eſtate is mortgaged to us, we ſeldom let it go out of our hands; for if the money lent be not brought and paid juſt on the day, then we put the borrower off till the next ſix moneths, refuſing to deliver up the writings, and then it becomes forfeited, ſo that we force them to ſell it to us, or give extraordinary fees, to cauſe us to releaſe our intereſt; eſpecially if we diſcover it to be ſold to another, we refuſe to ſhew the writings, and ſo weary out the borrower with delays and pretences, *&c.* But this was but ſmall game, to what we after played, as I ſhall preſently tell you, for the 350 *l.* being all put out in parcels, and though they often returned

with profit enough, yet it was very hard to get 400*l.* together to pay the money that was borrowed, for now it had been lent a year, and the Ufurer, though he hath never fo good fecurity, yet he loves to fee his money fometimes, efpecially when he deals with a ftranger, as the man was that borrowed it; and though my Mafter might have cheated him of his money, yet he was unwilling fo to give over, but proceed in his Trade which had gained him fo much: wherefore my Mafter upon fearch and inquiry, found that the fame Company (whofe Seal he had Counterfeited) had a parcel of Land in the Countrey, not far from *London*, which they had let to a wealthy Citizen, who had given over Trading for fome years, and now lived in the Country: My Mafter getting the particulars of this Land foon makes a Leafe, and with the help of his Counterfeit Seal, makes it authentick, fo that without much trouble he procures a thoufand pound to be lent upon it by another Ufurer who lived private, and the bufinefs was fo ordered, that the Ufurer was well enough contented without feeing the Land: my Mafter gave his old Confederate forty pound to perfonate the borrower, and then he paid in the four hundred pound that was formerly borrowed, fo that only he thereby engaged that Ufurer to him, who now had fo good an opinion of my Mafter, that he foon made it up fifteen hundred pound, and defired him to procure him either good fecurity, or a purchafe for it: all which was done in a fair way, to the Ufurers content, and my Mafters profit; and thus did our Trade increafe, my Mafter getting much money,

and many a Crown, and half piece came into my pocket; for he knowing that I was privy to the firſt Cheat, did humor me very much, and took his Son off from abuſing me, and caufed every body that borrowed money to give me fome gratuity for expedition, fo that I had money enough, and the keeping of all my Maſters Caſh is committed to my charge: My Maſter had one rare contrivance lately, which I will tell you of whilſt it is in my minde; and thus it was, he had a Kinfwoman who had long lived with him, and ſome moneys he had of hers in his hands, which was a Legacy formerly given her by another. This Maid being Courted by a Shop-keeper in way of Marriage, the match went forwards, and was agreed upon on thefe terms; the Shop-keepers Father was to give him a hundred pound in money to put him into Stock, and my Maſter was to give his Kinfwoman fifty pound, this being agreed on, my Maſter takes the young man aſide, and thus difcourfes him: *Young man, here have I agreed to give fifty pound with my Kinſwoman, which gains you a hundred pound of your Father, now I having not ready money by me, muſt borrow this fifty pound, for which you muſt be bound with me, and when it becomes due I will pay it; This I ſay you muſt do without acquainting your Father, and ſo the buſineſs ſhall be done, and I pray be a good Husband, &c.* The young man ſoon conſented, the marriage was confummated, and all things went well for a while, but within twelve months the young couple having run out all, my Maſters Kinſwoman came again to her Uncle to acquaint him with their condition, and

deſire his advice and aſſiſtance; my Maſter was much troubled at this chance, for he expected the contrary, and intended to get back the fifty pound for which end he had the young man bound, that he might be forced to pay the money, when in a condition; but ſeeing it was otherwiſe, he conſidered the matter, and wiſh'd her to ſend her Husband to him, and be patient, and make no words, and all ſhould be well: her Husband according to order came, and after ſeveral checks paſt for his ill husbandry, he asked him if his Father knew any thing of his Condition? no, ſaid the young man, I have kept it from his knowledge, and he thinks I thrive in the world, and is glad of it; well then, ſaid my Maſter, you know I gave you fifty pound, for which you were bound, and indeed it is ſtill unpaid: now if you will be contented to pay that fifty pound in, I will raiſe you two hundred pound, ſo that you ſhall have fifty pound more in ready money, and then ſee how good a Husband you will be. To this the young man gladly conſented, and my Maſter ſoon after took occaſion to meet and drink with his Father, and after ſome other diſcourſe, they joyntly talked of the young mans thriving in the world, and were both glad of the match, and good husbandry: but ſaid my Maſter, now I think on it, there is now an opportunity of doing him much good if he had more money, and therefore you would do well to furniſh them; I ſhall not be backward, replies the Father, upon a good account, therefore I pray tell me the buſineſs: My Maſter thereupon told him, that with two hundred pound more he might be bravely ſettled and

furniſhed, for the Leaſe of his Houſe is to be ſold, and I can get it for a hundred pound, and that is a rich penny-worth, and the other hundred pound, I would have him to lay out in furniſhing his ſhop more plentifully, than now it is. Truly reply'd the old man, this would do well: but I have no money at preſent, neither if I had, ſhould I be willing to part from any more than a hundred pound at a time; Well for that, ſaid my Maſter, if you pleaſe, I will manage the matter: Thus will I procure two hundred pound for the young man; nay, and I have ſo great a love for him, that I will be bound with him and you for it, and when it ſhall be due, you ſhall only pay a hundred pound of the money, and your Son the t'other: To this the old man after ſome pauſe, and a little conſideration conſented, the buſineſs was done, and the money paid. My Maſter indeed being acquainted with the Landlord of the young man's Houſe, gained a Leaſe of it for eighty pound, and made the young man allow a 100*l.* and deducting the fifty pound he had formerly given him, he gave him the t'other fifty pound. Thus had my Maſter his fifty pound again, and twenty pound for his pains in the buſineſs. When the money became due, my Maſters Confederate, the Uſurer, in whoſe name the Bond was made, demanded the money of the young man, where there was none to be had; and the old man was willing to pay only a hundred pound of it according to Contract, where ſhall I have the reſt, ſaid the Uſurer? why truly ſaid the old man, if my Son cannot pay you, then let his wives Uncle, meaning my Ma-

ſter: But courſe was ſoon taken otherwiſe, and my Maſter being firſt, and principle in the Bond, made no more ado, but confeſſed Judgement, and thereupon Execution was taken out againſt them all, but ſerved only upon the old man, who was forced to pay all the money. Thus my Maſter, by being principle in the Bond faved himſelf, regained the fifty pound he had formerly lent, and gained twenty pound, beſides making of Writings; and this, ſaid he, will ſerve to help my Kinſwoman when I ſee occaſion. I having heard him with good attention, and conſidering with my ſelf my own petty Rogueries, and how inconſiderable they were in compariſon of what he had related to me, could not but burſt out into admiration, and told him, that I ſaw the world was an abſolute Cheat: and now I find that ſaying to be verified which I had often heard, That the World conſiſted but of two ſorts, *Knaves* and *Fools*, and that the one lived by out-witting and Cheating the other; and if there were any honeſt men, they were ſuch as onely lived a contemplative life, and dealt not in this world; their whole thoughts being taken up in the Contemplation of another; Truly, reply'd the Scrivener, if you had known ſo much as I of all ſorts of people (for we deal with people of all Qualities and Profeſſions) you would conclude ſo indeed: and as the poor mans ability will not carry him high enough to Cheat ſo much at firſt, ſo he attempting it, and being diſcovered, is quite loſt: but if a rich man, or any who had ſucceſs in *Knavery* ſets upon it to get an Eſtate, it is ſoon compaſſed, and the folly

and eaſineſs of many honeſt borrowers enriches the Knaviſh lender. Thus we both concluded, as ſufficiently evidenced by the Examples he had given me: and therefore I deſired him to proceed, which he did in this manner.

CHAP. XXI.

He proceeds in diſcovering ſeveral conſiderable Cheats of his Maſters, whereby he grows very rich: alſo ſome Cheats of his own, and ſo concludes.

MY Maſter (continued the Scrivener) being now poſſeſſed of a thouſand pound in ready money, there fell out an opportunity of good advantage; (and I have obſerved it, that there is no loſs, but profit enough to be gained in keeping five hundred pound alwayes in a readineſs in Caſh, eſpecially in our Trade, where ſo many offers for ſale of Land and Houſes are daily made.). The Landlord of my Maſters Houſe was lately dead, and his Son and Heir being a wild blade, ſoon ſpent all the ready money his Father left, and all the Debts he could well get in; and now to ſelling of ſome of his Houſes he muſt go, and my Maſter being known to be a moneyed man, and a Scrivener, was thought the beſt Cuſtomer: He therefore propounds borrowing of five hundred pound, but my Maſter being now poſſeſſed of a round ſum, and hoping to have a good pennyworth, was very willing to buy. The young man and ſome friends were unwilling, and could not agree upon terms, and my Maſter at laſt conſents

to lend the money, provided he may have a mortgage of all that eſtate in that place, which amounted to two hundred pound *per annum*, was worth three thouſand pound, and ſaid he, you ſhall not need to make me an abſolute aſſignment or ſale of it all, only a Leaſe at a Pepper Corn a year for one and twenty years: But to confirm it, and for a Collateral ſecurity, you muſt give me a Statute Staple, to which our young man and his friends conſented. The Leaſe was made, and a Statute for a thouſand pound entred into, and the money paid and lent for ſix moneths only. The noiſe of this, and my Maſters other Trading, brought him into great eſteem both with lenders and borrowers, ſo that his *Name* being up, he may lie a bed till noon, and yet get money enough. A purchaſe of Land in the Country was offered, and my Maſter bought it for a thouſand five hundred pound, of which he borrowed upon a Leaſe of part of it. The ſix moneths quickly came about wherein his young Landlord was to pay the five hundred pound: but (according to my Maſters expectation) he failed, and then it was to be ſold, my Maſter agreed to give two thouſand five hundred pound for it, and ſo they ſtruck up a bargain, five hundred he had received before, a thouſand pound he made a ſhift to borrow upon the mortgage of the Land he had lately purchaſed; (for, though as I told you he borrowed five hundred pound of the money when he purchaſed the Land, and gave a mortgage of part of it for ſecurity, yet he keeping the principal Writings in his hands, concealed that mortgage, and now borrowed a thouſand pound more

of it) five hundred pound more he raiſed in ready money of his own, which was two thouſand pound, and for the other five hundred pound, the remainder of the two thouſand five hundred pound: his young Landlord took his Bond for the money, not queſtioning his ſecurity for five hundred pound, that could pay two thouſand pound ready money, neither indeed had he occaſion as yet for it. This being concluded, the money being paid, and writings ſeal'd, my Maſter would not remember to give up the Statute he had for a thouſand pound, but he had another now for five thouſand pound for ſecurity of his bargain, and the young man never ſo much as deſired a *Defeazance* upon the Statute, but mark what follow'd. The youngſter in ſhort time, keeping riotous company, waſting his body as well as purſe, died; and his younger Brother ſeized on his eſtate that was unſpent: and among other things, on my Maſters Bond of five hundred pound, and ſoon after demanded it; though my Maſter at firſt was non-plus'd, yet he ſoon bethought him of a way how to diſcharge and acquit himſelf of it: and thereupon returned this anſwer. It is very true, your Brother and I had much dealing, and I did give him ſuch a Bond which I am ready to pay to his Executor, which you tell me you are, provided you pay me what he likewiſe owed unto me: why, reply'd the young man, did he owe you any moneys? yea, ſaid my Maſter: and whereas you produce a Bond, which is indeed a very good ſpeciality, I ſhall produce ſomewhat that is higher, and indeed the higheſt ſecurity that can be given for any Debt, and that is a Statute Staple: and thereupon he produced

one Statute firſt, that was given for a thouſand pound upon borrowing of the five hundred pound; nay, but ſaid, the young man, I ſuppoſe that this was part of the money that was for the purchaſe of your dwelling houſe and others; for that, ſaid my Maſter I can ſhew you a particular Receipt for all the money under his hand and ſeal, and alſo a general acknowledgment in the Deed of conveyance: wherefore this money I muſt have you pay me firſt, and afterwards I ſhall talk with you further; what do you mean by further talk ſaid the young man? why, ſaid my Maſter, I mean to have of you all that your Brother owed me, which is much more than you think for: for he and I had great dealings together for a greater ſum of money than all this, as I ſhall further ſhew you; and thereupon he produced the ſecond Statute, which was for five thouſand pound. This demand of my Maſters ſo vexed the young man, that he departed, and ſoon began his courſe at Law againſt my Maſter, but he took a wrong ſow by the ear, for he finding whereabouts he intended on his two Statutes, was too quick for this youngſter, and gained a *Liberate*, which he delivered to the Sheriff, who ſerved it upon all the eſtate of the deceaſed; ſo that by this means all that was unſpent of the dead young mans eſtate (amounted in Land to the value of four thouſand pound) came to my Maſters hands, and yet he ſayes he is unſatisfied: and the young man the Brother of the deceaſed cannot help it, for by this means he is bereft of all Eſtate to go to Law: and when money and means is wanting, friends are ſcarce; beſides, I know not how he can avoid

it, his Brother not having taken a *Defeazance*, as he ought to have done. Here was a matter worth playing the *Knave* for, and would induce ſome men to leave off: but my Maſter had ſo good ſucceſs in his proceedings, that he is reſolved to proceed in them. The money that he borrowed on all the Mortgages, both Counterfeit Leaſes and others, he ſoon paid off, and yet left himſelf worth above three hundred pound *per annum*, and money in his purſe. Thus having a good eſtate, and now being full of imployments, both for buying, ſelling, borrowing, and lending: he always keeps a good Bank of money. If any purchaſe of Land come at twelve or thirteen years purchaſe, he buyes it, becauſe he knows of a Cuſtomer that will give fifteen or ſixteen. And thus he will gain five hundred pounds in a weeks time. We lately had one buſineſs worth all the reſt, and which hath now made him weary of getting money: A Knight having a Lordſhip in the Country worth two thouſand pound *per annum*, comes firſt to borrow money, and grants a Leaſe and Statute upon the borrowing of two thouſand pound: this my Maſter lent himſelf of his own money, the Knight within a moneth or two being to marry a Daughter, wants two thouſand pound more, which was likewiſe promiſed on the ſame ſecurity: by this time my Maſter was ſomewhat drained of his ready money, and knowing that the Knight would ſoon be with him again, he caſts about how to raiſe more: which thus he does, he borrows 1500*l.* upon a Leaſe of part of his purchaſe, of his dwelling houſe and others, and keeps the grand Writings in his hands; he bor-

rows a thouſand pound on his Land in the Country, and of another party he borrows fifteen hundred pound more upon a Leaſe of part of his purchaſe of his dwelling houſe and others, keeping ſtill the grand Writings in his hands: and thus having eight thouſand pound ready money, he goes to the Knight, and upon treaty, agrees to give him thirty two thouſand pound for his eſtate, which price being concluded on, he borrows two thouſand pound upon his dwelling houſe and others, and then parts from the grand Writings, and Covenants that the eſtate is free of Incumbrances, though he had twice mortgaged it in part: and thus having raiſed ten thouſand pound, he borrows twelve thouſand pound more upon part of his new purchaſe, and the Knight is contented to take the t'other ten thouſand pound in full of the purchaſe, at two ſix moneths, and only takes my Maſters Bond: this was lately ſettled and agreed upon, and all Writings made, and I doubt the Knight will come ſhort of his money; for my Maſter hath ſo many Statutes which the Knight never dreams of, having ſtill given them without taking *Defeazances*, that I believe he will be cut off from his Debt, and ſo muſt the *Uſurer* that lent my Maſter the twelve thouſand pound upon a mortgage of part of his new Lordſhip; for my Maſter being reſolved to make this a piece of wit, and to do his utmoſt to cheat them all, did the next day after the Purchaſe was made, and Writings ſealed, cauſe us to ſit up all night, and make an abſolute bargain and ſale of all that his new purchaſe to two friends in truſt, for the uſe of his Children, ſo that the

Uſurer who lent his twelve thouſand pounds, had not his Writings of Aſſignments ſealed till a week or ten dayes after, and when the time comes for payment, he may be chous'd and defeated of all, and my Maſter being Maſter of an Eſtate of two thouſand pounds *per annum*, may live and laugh at them all for their credulity; for he hath ſo ordered it that the Law cannot touch the Eſtate, it may only reach his perſon, and as for that, we know it is but a *Kings-Bench* matter, and there he may live all his life time, and ſpend like a Lord, and when he dies his Debts are paid, and his Eſtate goes to his Children. But if he hath ſucceſs for two or three more ſuch buſineſſes as this laſt, he need not do ſo, but leave the Cheat to the laſt Caſt, and grow infinitely rich, as I queſtion not but he will.

Thus, ſaid our Scrivener, have I given you an account of my Maſters way to get money, and I have not been without mine: he would many times permit me to cheat a little, becauſe I aſſiſted him and was privy to his concerns. I have one way that brings me in twenty or thirty pounds *per annum*; for all Deeds of Bargain and Sale are to be Enrolled in ſix moneths after the date, either in *Chancery*, if it be Land or Houſes out of *London*, or in *Guild-Hall*, if within *London* or the Liberties thereof; and I was once forced to trot to *Chancery-lane* four or five times for one Deed before I could get it done, and when it was done, all that was to be ſeen on the Deed was, *Inrolled* ſuch a Day and Year in *Chancery*, *per me* ſuch a one. I ſeeing that, learned to write the Hand, they uſe in Endorſing, and for the future only

writ it my ſelf on the back ſide to ſhew our Clients, and that was ſufficient; for not one in a thouſand is ſearch'd for, and this is only done in caſe the Deed be loſt, ſo that I now have got the trick on't to write on the back-ſide my ſelf, and put that money the Regiſter ſhould have into my own pocket, and that is a pretty quantity, for an indifferent Deed comes to twenty ſhillings, at ſo much *per* Roll. Forty other wayes have I to get moneys, and indeed I need not invent wayes, for our Trade is ſo great for *Procuration* and *Continuation*, and ſuch like, that I get money enough more than I can well tell how to ſpend.

I will now conclude, onely tell you a ſtory or two, how I have initiated my ſelf in this Art of *Knavery*, for my time being ſuddenly to expire, I thought it neceſſary to try ſome expedients how I might live hereafter when I came to be for my ſelf; and knowing that my Maſter could not do any thing at firſt without a Confederate (ſome body to help and aſſiſt him) I procured the like: We had many indigent perſons that came to borrow money, ſome Gentlemen, others decayed and decaying Citizens; amongſt the reſt a Maſter of a Ship, who had made ſo many broken voyages that he could make no more, for he had wearied all his Friends with holding parts of Ships with him to their great loſs; but he holding to the Proverb, *That a Sea-man is never broken till his neck is broken*, was reſolved to try his fortune one bout more, and had now with the help of Friends made a ſhift to buy an old Barque of near a hundred Tun, in which he was minded to go to Sea, partly as a Man of War, and withal

to bring home prohibited Goods from *France.* This man was an earneſt ſuiter to borrow an hundred pounds upon *Bottomry*, or any wayes, to victual and fit his Ship ; I finding him ingenious, after ſome conference with him, and he being willing for any Undertaking, we concluded to go half ſhips in the profit of his Voyage, and I would furniſh him with moneys to his content : I ſoon perſwaded an eaſie friend of mine who had more money than wit, to lend our Captain an hundred pounds, promiſing him great profit, and indeed he was to have fifty in the hundred for that Voyage, which was to be finiſhed in two moneths, and I told him that he might enſure his money at the *Enſurance Office*, which he did accordingly. Our Captain being furniſhed with a hundred pound of the Uſurer, I made bold with an hundred pound more of my Maſters, which could not ſoon be miſſed out of the Caſh, and with this the Ship was ſo bravely fitted and provided with all Neceſſaries, that he was offered Fraights enough. At laſt he concluded with one to bring over ſome rich Goods, and the times being dangerous at Sea, by reaſon of Men of War at Sea, he enſured five hundred pounds upon the Ship.

The Enſurers knowing this, and that the man who enſured was a ſubſtantial Merchant, miſtruſted nothing ; but likewiſe enſured five hundred pounds more to the Captain, becauſe he had laid out much in fitting the Ship, and did it as he pretended for ſatisfaction of the Owners. All things being thus fitted, our Captain leaving his Policy or Deed of Enſurance with me, put out to Sea, arrived at his Port, received the Goods on Board,

but having a parcel of truſty Blades with him, and ſome who had ſhares in the purchaſe, he puts the beſt part of the Merchandize on Board of a ſmall Barque he had hired for that purpoſe, and that being ſent aſhore to another Port, he ſoon after ran his Ship aſhore in ſuch a place as he was not likely to come off, and there ſhe periſhed, he and his companions getting on ſhore with ſome ſmall matter of Goods in the Long-boat: He being arrived on ſhore, ſoon writ word to me how he had ſped, and I being acquainted very well with the Enſurers, perſwaded them to pay me the money he had enſured firſt, upon ſome ſmall rebate; and he on the other ſide ſelling the Merchandize on ſhore, put it into other commodities and ſent them home, and himſelf came home as a diſtreſſed paſſenger, and here the Enſurers paid for all: Such bouts as theſe they ſometimes met with, and that ſo often, that now adayes when a Merchant hath enſured, he had need to enſure on the Enſurers, and ſome have done ſo.

When our Captain came home, we privately met and ſhared our profit, and by this I gained two hundred pounds for my ſhare, and this was a good beginning; and though I hazarded to Sea, yet there was leſs hazard then my Maſter underwent in his firſt attempt in Counterfeiting a Companies Seal; for ſhould he have been diſcovered, ſorrow would have been his ſops. I have now and then had five or ten pound given me at a time for altering a Will, and putting in more as Legacy to one than the Teſtator intended, and this I would venture on without much hazard, if the Teſtator were ſick to death. My Maſter

once made a Will, and inſtead of another, made himſelf Executor, and I and one more of the Confederacy were witneſſes to it, by this means he gained near three hundred pound.

I have oftentimes had a Piece or two given me to make Writings in favour of one man more than another; for in a Leaſe, if Rent reſerved be 100*l. per annum*, and there be no Covenant for payment of the Rent, when either of the parties die, if any Rent be behind due to the Leſſee, it cannot be recovered by the Executors, Adminiſtrators, or Aſſigns of the Leſſor, becauſe there was no Covenant between them in behalf of their Executors, Adminiſtrators and Aſſigns; and it hath been uſual in all ancient Leaſes to leave that Covenant out as needleſs, but now people are grown wiſer by experience.

In arbitration between parties there is much cunning and knavery to be uſed, in drawing up an Award, or final End; for the Scrivener, if he be a friend to, or favour either of the parties, ſhall do it ſo as that it ſhall be void, or not authentick, or not obliging to one of the parties, and yet the Arbitrators who are commonly honeſt harmleſs men, think they have done their buſineſs, when as they have only made more work for Lawyers.

In *Counter-Bonds* there may be much partiality uſed, as alſo in *Letters of Attorney*, only putting in *his uſe*, for *my uſe*, entitles the Attorney to receive all to his own uſe without any account; and ſuch a thing as this is often ſlipt over, or not underſtood, and many a good piece and Half-piece comes into our pockets in a year for theſe actions.

It was like to go very hard with one of my Maſters acquaintance not long ſince, for he being skilled in counterfeiting of Hands, did very artificially counterfeit a Citizens Hand (with whom he had ſome ſmall dealing) to a Bond of 400*l.* to pay 200*l.* with intereſt at a day, and when the time came he asked him before ſome company to pay him that money that he then owed him: Yes, ſaid the Citizen, I ſhall do it next week, meaning a ſmall ſum which he did directly owe him, and did then pay him, but the other then telling him of his Bond of 400*l.* and the Citizen directly denying it, a Suit was commenced, and Tryal was had at the *Kings-Bench* Bar in *Weſtminſter-Hall*, where the innocent Citizen (ſeeing the confidence of the Witneſſes, and indeed his own hand, as he ſuppoſed, to the Bond, which he could not deny but it was ſo, or very like) and having nothing to ſay, in a paſſion cryed out in open Court, *to deſire God to revenge his Cauſe, for he was utterly and abſolutely wronged.* This being ſo ſolemnly proteſted, made not only the Judge but the Jury a little more inquiſitive into the matter than ordinary, and called for ſome papers to compare the hand with other of his handwriting, but no difference could be found therein. The Bond thus paſſing about to every one of the Jury, one of them viewing the Bond more narrowly than ordinary, craved leave of the Judge to be diſcharged of his place as a Jury-man, and to be admitted & ſworn as a Witneſs; for my Lord, ſaith he, I can ſay ſomewhat to the matter. This his requeſt was aſſented to, and he being ſworn, began in this manner, *My Lord, this Bond*

here in Court is pretended to be made, ſealed, and delivered nine moneths ſince, when, my Lord, this Paper whereon it is written, hath not been in England *above four moneths.* How do you know that? ſaid my Lord. The Jury-man replyed, *My Lord, I am a* Stationer *or* Paper-ſeller, *and to all Paper there are ſeveral marks whereby we know and diſtinguiſh them*; *As* Pot, Piller, Crown, Cardinals-Armes, &c. *and my Lord, this being ſuch a ſort of Paper was made by a young man in* France, *whoſe mark is here, and none of it came over till within theſe four moneths.* At this the Judge was ſatiſfied, all people wondred, the Defendant rejoyced, and the Plaintiff with his Swearers were forced to ſneak out of the Court, and could not preſently be heard of.

I once was called to make a Will, and the party lying ſpeechleſs, another there preſent dictated to me, telling me, that the ſick man he was ſure would conſent to what he ſaid, which I believing, proceeded and finiſhed the Will, but when I came to have him ſign it, I ſaw that he was dead: well, ſaid the party that dictated, if you will be ruled by me, this Will ſhall ſtand, and yet nobody forſwear themſelves, and ſaid he to me, you ſhall have a good reward for your conſent. I being ready to receive money, promiſed him my conſent; whereupon, ſaith he, read the Will, ſo I did: well, ſaith he, you ſee the party doth not at all contradict what is here written, & now he ſhall ſet his hand and ſeal thereto, which he did by guiding the dead mans hand: now, ſaith he, if you be queſtioned, you may ſafely ſwear that you read the Will to him, and he conſented, or

at leaſtwiſe did not contradict, and that you ſaw him with his own hand ſign, ſeal, and deliver the ſame. Well ſir, ſaid I, if you are content I am; and thereupon he giving me the promiſed reward, I ſubſcribed as Witneſs, and left him, who ſoon after by vertue of this Will poſſeſſed himſelf of the Eſtate. I had ſeen this trick of putting a dead mans hand to Writings done two or three times before, and ſo this was no new thing, and would not contradict any thing that was to turn to my profit.

I could tell you thouſands of theſe Cheats, and indeed, as one ſaid, there is more miſchief done with a daſh of the Pen, than with any thing elſe in the way of Knavery and Cheating. Thus did our Scrivener conclude his Diſcourſe, and we calling for another pint of Wine and a Faggot, drank and warmed our ſelves, and ſo for that time parted.

CHAP. XXII.

The Book-ſellers Prentice gives an account of his Maſters firſt tricks in Cheating, by Printing Books that were other mens Copies.

AFter this conference with the Scrivener, I went home; and as he told me, my ſaying to my Maſter that I had been with him was ſufficient, ſo I found it; for I was asked no more Queſtions, but went to bed; and there did I recollect to my ſelf, all that he had that evening told me: and though I could not perfectly remember the ſeveral terms of Art he uſed, as Judgement, Execution, *Scire facias*, Statute, Procuration, and Continuation, *&c.* Yet I was ſenſible of their meaning, and did very much wonder, how any man could ſleep being guilty of ſo many crimes as he and his Maſter were; yet I found that they ſlept the better, or at leaſtwiſe fared the better, by reaſon of their great wealth; and then did I compare my forepaſſed life, to what I had heard of them, and it was not worth mentioning; ſo that from that time, I had a more charitable opinion for my ſelf then formerly. And ſince I had ſo good ſucceſs with my Scrivener, I was reſolved to be a little more intimate with the reſt of the Society, eſpecially the Book-ſeller, that I might know how he gained his Money: and the next day I had my deſire; for meeting him abroad, we went to an Ale-houſe, and there did I diſcover to him part

of my yeſterdays actions with the Scrivener, and thereby induced him to make me this following Diſcourſe.

Truly Brother (for ſo we called one another) you have told me wonders, though ſo admirable, that I could not have thought ſo much crafty knavery could have been committed by any man breathing, though I did believe that there was more then I underſtood, having always heard that it was a dangerous thing to ſqueeze Wax, and that Scriveners in general were cunning fellows, but that any man out of nothing ſhould by tricks and ſubtile contrivances, gain to himſelf ſo great an Eſtate, and yet not run into the compaſs of the Law, but now I ſee the Proverbs verified, *Nothing venture, nothing have*, and that *a blot is no blot till it be hit*, and *give a man luck and throw him into the Sea.* And although I have thought my Maſter a man cunning and crafty enough, and did believe that he who deals in Books could not be outwitted, yet I ſee that a piece of Parchment with a ſeal to it, is better then a great many Books, nay then a whole Impreſſion : but that I may give you ſome ſatisfaction in what you deſire, I ſhall proceed in my Diſcourſe; and though I cannot tell you ſo many, nor ſo profitable contrivances as you have related to me, yet thoſe of our calling deſerve not to go much behind, and we do our utmoſt good will to cheat, though it turns not to ſo good an account.

My Maſter when I came to Prentice had but a ſmall ſtock of Books, and thoſe were all in his Shop, with which, together with ſome paper,

parchment, pens, and ſuch like Stationers ware, he made a ſhift to pick up an indifferent livelihood; but he being of a reaching brain, and ſeeing there were very rich people, ſuch as gained great Eſtates, and lived bravely of the ſame trade: he made it his buſineſs to inquire into their way: the moſt ſorts of Books that we ſold were Teſtaments, Pſalters, Grammars, Accidences, and ſuch books as we call Priviledged ware, and indeed were Printed for the Company in general, and to be had of ſome of the Stock-keepers, or maſters of the Company, or at the Hall, and though our profit in ſelling theſe ſorts of books was but ſmall, as not above two pence in the ſhilling, yet it was a certain commodity, and the ſale ſure: whereas other books; either of Divinity, Hiſtory, *&c.* were not ſo certain, though more profitable, as commonly bringing four pence in the ſhilling profit, and thus did we continue buying books of other book-ſellers, as we were asked for them, and had occaſion; my Maſter commonly keeping to one man, becauſe he could there be truſted and furniſhed, with any book he wanted, it fortuned that a new book being printed, a ſmall thing of about four or five ſheets of paper: it ſold ſo well, that my Maſter went often for them to his wonted place: one time they had none of them left, but deſiring my Maſter to ſtay, they would ſend for ſome; which my Maſter did, but the Meſſenger came back without any, and brought word that he ſhould not have any more of them upon account or exchange, for he now held

them at ready Money, and that he would have, or part from none; well then, faid my Maſter, I will go thither and buy fome my ſelf. No, faid the Maſter of the ſhop, you ſhall not need, I'le ſend for fome this once with ready Money, and you ſhall have them cheaper of me then of him; and ſo he did, and he received them and told me, that if he wanted any more, he could be very well furniſhed with them within three or four days, and the other had been better not to have ſerved him ſo; but the book ſelling very well, all my maſters were gone that night; and I went my ſelf to the bookfeller who printed them for fome, the which I had; but the next day I went again, he had none, and told me that I could not have any in a weeks time. I acquainted my Maſter herewith, who being called upon for fome of them, went to his old place to ſee if they had any, they told him they had none at preſent, but to morrow he might have what number he pleaſed, accordingly the next day I went, and brought fifty of them with me; and then my Maſter (beginning to ſuſpect that which he afterwards found out) ſent me to the bookſellers who printed them, and he had none, wherefore he then concluded that the bookfeller with whom he was wont to deal had printed them, though they were none of his Copy, at which he wondred: for the greater ſort of bookſellers did uſe to inform us that it was a moſt heinous and unlawful thing to print another mans Copy, ſo that I think, this was the firſt time that my maſter diſcovered this Myſ-

ſtery, for the Book continuing to fell, we fold in our Shop above five hundred of them; fo that my Maſter begining to conſider with himſelf, reckoned that he had payd to his Dealer above five pounds for thefe Pamphlets, and yet got very well by them too: wherefore not long after coming into the company of a Printer, he asked what it would coſt to print 2000 of a Book of five Sheets of paper: the Printer replyed, Ten pound: by this my maſter gueffed that his Dealer had gained half in half by him: for he had paid for 500, half what 2000 would coſt. My Maſter holding fome further Difcourfe with this Printer over a pot of Ale, he told him that he did work for ſuch a man, naming the Bookfeller with whom my Maſter dealt, and faith he, I lately did two ſheets for him of a book he gained well by, for I printed 5000 for my ſhare: fo that at length, after conference together, they concluded it was the fame book my Maſter fold fo many of, and that he had printed it in three or four places for expedition, and that he could not gain lefs then 30*l.* by printing it: I but fays my Maſter, how will he do to anfwer it to the other man whofe Copy it was? For that, faid the Printer, he will do well enough, for the other is but a young man, and light upon his Copy by chance; and though the Law forbids fuch doings, as the printing one anothers Copies, yet the great ones commonly devour and eat up the little ones, and will venture on it being but a fmall thing; and it may be this young man is indebted to the other: and indeed it is a uſual thing, and we do

ſuch Jobbs very ſrequently, eſpecially ſor the Grand ones of the Company. But how comes it, ſaid my Maſter, that ſome or other do not print their Copies, as Teſtaments, Pſalters, *&c.* As ſor that, ſaid the Printer, it is very dangerous, ſor if they were taken, it belonging to the whole Company, they would be ſure to ſeize on it, and ſue the party ſo offending; beſides, the books are too big ſor every one to venture on, & will lie too long in hand a doing; but ſometimes ſuch things are done, but in another way, as I can tell. Thus ended my Maſter and the Printer their Diſcourſe of this matter, and my Maſter deſired the printer to call on him ſome times, and he would drink with him; and it may be have ſome employment ſor him, and thus they parted. My Maſter now underſtanding thus much of his Trade, more than ſormerly, was reſolved it ſhould not be long ere he were doing ſomewhat: thus pondering in his mind, he could not tell what deſign to begin with, for we ſold very little but priveledged Ware, and thoſe it was dangerous medling with, neither would my Maſters ſtock reach to any thing conſiderable; at laſt reſolving to play at ſmall game rather then ſtand out, he bethought himſelſ, and reſolved to print the *A B C*, a little Childs book of a ſheet of paper: he knew not then what printer to intruſt, for he durſt not make uſe of the ſormer Printer, leſt he ſhould acquaint his Dealer; but it was not long ere he light upon one fit for his purpoſe, and to work he went, my maſter ſending in paper, and ſo they were printed, delivered, and paid for, but when my

Maſter had them, he knew not how to diſpoſe of them, leſt he ſhould be caught; but that he might have the better pretence, he went and bought 300 of them of his Dealer, and ſo laying them by, ſold his own, and being acquainted with a primer-binder, he got him to exchange with him for primers, and ſuch like ſmall books he was rid of moſt of them to his great profit, for he gained, as I have heard him ſay, above five pounds by that jobb, which was then a great deal of money, and by this means his Shop was better furniſhed with ſmall books & paper, and now he had good credit with the paper-Merchant, which before he could not have. Not long after, the Printer who had printed the *A B C* came to him and acquainted him, that if he would venture a matter of ten pounds, he might be concerned in printing of a book that would turn to a very good account and it may be get twenty pound by the bargain: he having had ſuch good ſucceſs in the laſt, ventures upon this; it was a Sermon that then ſold very well, and he had another partner, and my Maſter having ſome money by him, and pretty good credit at the paper-merchants; he found paper, and the other paid for printing, and at two places it was done in a Week; my maſter putting them out in *London* to the *Mercuries* and others at one penny a piece leſs then the ordinary rate, and his partner dealing with Country-Chapmen, ſent good ſtore away into the Country; and thus, though this was another mans Coppy, they ſold all their books in a ſhort time, and gained 25*l.* a piece. This was a good beginning, ſaid I to the Bookſeller, and I

did not think your Trade had been ſo profitable; but now I believe, that theſe courſes being proſecuted, a conſiderable Eſtate may be gained in a ſhort time: that you ſhall ſoon hear, replied he: but the Diſcourſe being ſomewhat long, I ſhall for the preſent end, and proſecute the reſt in the following Chapter.

CHAP. XXIII.

He proceeds in the diſcovery of his Maſters ways in cheating, in preferring ſome Copies, and other ways of getting Copies.

MY Maſter having now had ſome experience in this way of printing, was reſolved to play above board, and get ſome Copy or Copies to print, that he might own; which in ſhort time he did, and glad was he to ſee his name in print, ſuppoſing himſelf now to be ſome body: but theſe things did him but little good, and ſold but eaſily, he not having the way of preferring books, and ſending them to ſome Country Chapmen, and the reſt of the bookſellers, who endeavor to cruſh any beginner, and will not ſell his books, unleſs they may have them at their own rate, would not ſell any of them

for him? and beſides, now he gave Mony for his Copies, the other coſting him nothing: and though a book be never ſo good, they will not ſell with ſome men, for the others will undervalue and ſpoil it: as for example, If my Maſter had printed at that time the beſt book of Chirurgery, Husbandry, Cookery, or the like in the World, and though the book had been famous enough, ſo that every one deſired it, and asked at any bookſellers ſhop for it, they would have ſaid to their Cuſtomers, Truly Sir, there is ſuch a book, but in regard it is a fooliſh idle thing, and of no weight, I have not any of them, I will not trouble my ſhop with them; but Sir, here is another of the ſame Subject, that is much better, and in great eſteem with ingenious and knowing men: If the Cuſtomer repliés he would have only that book and no other, for that it was recommended to him for an ingenious well-writ piece, then will he reply, Truly Sir, I never heard any of your judgement before, till now I was never asked for them; but ſince you ſpeak ſo well of it, I will procure you one: and then it may be, for all this Diſcourſe he will ſhew you one, as if left by chance, or elſe ſend to his neighbour-bookſeller for one. Thus will he diſparage other mens books, and prize his own, and many times put off ſome of his own, the buyer being ſo civil as to believe him: and this is a general Maxime, That they will not offer, or prefer a book of any mans printing except their own, unleſs they have it either in exchange or at a low rate; and this

is the cauſe that there are ſome books as conſiderable, and good as any in *England*, that did not ſell at firſt for little better than waſt paper, till ſome of the Grand ones of the Company get them all into their hands, and then they ſell for three times the price they did. But to leave this Diſcourſe and proceed, my Maſter having now printed two or three things, did look upon himſelf as ſomebody; and though he had not ſuch good ſucceſs in his laſt undertakings as before, yet he made a ſhift to get what they coſt him for paper and print, and had many of them ſtill by him to ſell when he would, or exchange; but he having but two or three ſorts of books, could not do much good upon that: he ſeeing this, and obſerving what books ſold beſt, it being at the beginning of theſe late Wars, found that factious Sermons, and ſuch like things would do the buſineſs; he thereupon beſtirs himſelf, and gets acquainted with moſt of the factious Prieſts about Town, by often hearing them and frequenting their Companies, and having learned to write ſhort-hand, took notes of their Sermons, which he collected together, and now and then he would get them to reviſe one of them, and print it; by this means ſpending much time and mony amongſt them, he grew very intimate, and was become the general publiſher of moſt of their Sermons and Controverſies. This was that which brought him great gain, in a ſhort time he could vie with the beſt, what he ſold not for mony, he exchanged for books: and now he could command any

book in all the Company without mony, upon account, as is the Cuſtome. His Shop being well furniſhed, he gets a Ware-houſe, where he beſtowed his books in quires; and being thus furniſhed, he was firſt ſpoken to by ſome Country bookſellers, and then writ to by them and other, for ſeverall books, ſo that any thing that he printed he could ſell off well enough; for having good hap to print ſome very good ſelling books, they helped away the other that were not ſo good, and ſtill were thruſt into the parcel among the reſt: and now having ſome good Authors, he would not accept of every one; and as he formerly had ſought for, and courted Authors to write books for him, now they (knowing his way of preferring and ſelling of books) followed, and courted him to print their books. If a ſtranger came with a Copy to him, though never ſo good, he would tell them he had books enough already; but however, if they would give him ſo much money, he would do it, and they ſhould have two, or three, or ſix books for themſelves and friends: many a one did he thus perſwade out of their mony, being deſirous to be in print. If he had a deſire to have any thing writ in Hiſtory, Poetry, or any other Science or Faculty, he had his ſeveral Authors, who for a glaſs of Wine, and now and then a meals Meat and half a Crown, were his humble ſervants; having no other hire but that, and ſix or twelve of their books, which they preſented to friends or perſons of Quality; nay, and when they have had ſucceſs, if they wanted any more books,

they muſt pay ſor them: further I have known ſome of our Trade, that when a poor Author hath written a book, and being acquainted with ſome Perſon or perſons of Quality whereto he Dedicates and preſents it, the Book-ſeller will go ſnips and have half ſhares of what is ſo given him. My Maſter being now gotten to the height of his Trade, was ſoon called on to be one of the Livery of his Company, which though it be ſomewhat chargeable at firſt, yet it ſoon brings in profit, there being many conveniences therein; for they have liberty to put in a ſum of money into the publike Stock, and ſo great is their profit, that they have ſeldome leſs then twenty *per cent*, and then when, they come to be Stock-keepers or Warden they have the diſpoſing of the Stock-books, ſuch as are Teſtaments, Pſalters, *&c.* and putting them out to print, they often print ſo many overnumbers, that ſhall ſerve them as long as they live. In particular, there is no Trade that I ever heard of, that gets ſo much by their Commodity for whatever they print, if it ſels, they get eight pence in the ſhilling: and for thoſe that deal with Country-Chapmen, they put off the bad well enough at one time or another; and if they are very bad, then a new title is printed as if it were a new book; and what with this and changing, they march off in time.

There was one preacher in *London* that my Maſter was much reſpective to, for he had gained much money by printing ſeveral of his books (and though my Maſter in outward ap-

pearance ſeems a Saint, yet he hath his freaks, and will be merry with his friends, and be prophane enough.) One Sunday my maſter having been rambling in the fields, entred the City in the afternoon juſt as ſermon was done, and ſeeing this parſon going before him, he ſtept forwards, and overtaking him, ſalutes him thus, Sir, I am glad to ſee you ſo well, indeed Sir, you have this day taken a great deal of pains, and we are all beholden to you for your Soul-ſaving Sermon: how ſay you, ſaid the Parſon, what do you mean? Why Sir, I thank you for your Sermon you preached this afternoon: Nay, now Sir, ſaid the Parſon, I ſee you are miſtaken, for I have not preached this day, my maſter hearing this, was wonderfully ſurprized, not knowing what to ſay, but left the Parſon and came home diſcontented at his error. We having ſeveral Country-Chapmen, ſome whereof owed my maſter conſiderable ſums of mony, he took occaſion to go into the Countrey, and to be ſure, he would make it worth his Journeys for at every conſiderable Town he would buy ſome books, and ſell them at the next, or ſend them up to *London*, and ſometimes whole Libraries; and he did take order with all his Chapmen to acquaint him with all Libraries or parcels of books that were to be ſold, which if worth the buying he would have. He would alſo frequent the Schools, and by drinking with the School-maſters, and diſcourſing of books and learned men, he would get their cuſtome to ſerve them with School-books. There was one famous Country-Parſon whom he much deſired

to be acquainted with, and to him he rid, telling him he was troubled in mind, and deſired him to ſatisfie him in a caſe of Conſcience, the which he did; and then for his ſatisfaction, and to oblige him, he prayed and courted him to ſee him when he came to *London*, the which he did, and all this was to get the printing of his books. If a Cuſtomer comes into our Shop to buy a book, he hath ſuch ways of preferring and recommending of it, that they ſeldom go and not buy, for he will open the book, and if it be Divinity, ſhew them one place or another, out of which he will preach to them, and tell them, that very ſaying or diſcourſe is worth all the money in the world and if they do not like it when they have read it over, he will take it again: and ſo many of our Trade will promiſe, but you ſhall hardly ever get your money again, you may chance to have them exchange it for ſome other book, which they will be willing to do if there be money ſtirring in the caſe. My Maſter having had a book written for him by a Poet, the Author (not having the wit to make his bargain, and know what he ſhould have beforehand) when he had finiſhed it, deſired payment for his pains: Nay, ſaid my maſter, you ought rather to pay me for printing it, and making you famous in print. Well then, ſaid the Author, if you will not give me money, I hope you will give me ſome books. How, ſaid my maſter, give you books, what will you have me forſwear my Trade, and be a book-giver? I am a book-ſeller, and to you I will ſell them affoon

as to another, if you will give me money, paper and print coſts money, and this was all the Author could have for his pains. My Maſter is now one of the Grandees of the Company, and that beſides the ordinary way gets him ſomething. Not long ſince, he and others went a ſearching, and finding an impreſſion of unlicenſed books, ſeized them, but inſtead of ſuppreſſing and turning them to waſt paper, they divided the greateſt part of them amongſt themſelves, and immediately my Maſter ſent ſome of them away to all his Chapmen, and the reſt we ſell in the Shop. It ſo fell out lately; that a book being to be Printed, my Maſter repaired to the Author to get the Copy, but another of the ſame Trade had been there before, to whom it was in part promiſed; but however (out of reſpect to my Maſter) the other being ſent for, it was agreed that they ſhould have the printing of it between them; whereupon one printer was imployed by them both to do the work. My Maſter ſoon after ſent for the Printer, and tells him, You muſt do me a kindneſs: Yes Sir, ſaid the printer. It is this, ſaid my Maſter, I am to give away to the Authour ſome Books, wherefore I would have you to print 200 for me above the number, and do not tell my Partner, and I will pay you: Yes, ſaid the Printer, and ſo he did, and was paid for them accordingly. But the Printer ſeeing the knavery of his imployers (for the other had been with him; and engaged him to print the ſame number of 200 over, pretending ſome private uſe he had for them) he likewiſe printed 400 over for his own

uſe, and publiquely ſold them; and neither of them could or would complain of him to the other, becauſe they knew themſelves guilty of the ſame crime.

One of the greateſt pieces of profit the whole Company hath, is the printing of Almanacks, for by that, I believe, they clear above 1000 *l. per annum*: but a knaviſh Printer lately outwitted them, for he printed a great number of Almanacks, and though he printed but two ſorts, yet they ſerved for all the other ſorts, only altering the Title page, at the beginning, and the laſt ſheet which we call the *Prog*, or *Prognoſtication*; and theſe Almanacks he affording cheaper then ordinary, as indeed well he might, he ſold off a good number of them, which was to his gain and their great hinderance; but he is lately diſcovered, and how they will deal with him I know not.

In the late times of Liberty, when every one printed what they pleaſed, if one Bookſeller printed a book that ſold, another would get it printed in a leſſer Character, and ſo the book being leſs in bulk, though the ſame in matter, would ſell it for a great deal leſs price, and ſo underſell one another: and of late there hath been hardly a good book but it is epitomized, and for the moſt part ſpoiled, only for a little gain: ſo that few books that are good, are now printed, only Collections and patches out of ſeveral books; and Bookſellers employing the meaner ſort of Authors in ſpoiling anothers Copies by ſuch Epitomies.

A young man being lately to ſet up, was a ſuiter to my Maſter to ſpeak to the Company to lend him 50 *l.* for a certain time without intereſt, as is cuſtomary: for there are ſeveral ſums of money left the Company ſo to be diſpoſed of, for the benefit of young beginners. My Maſter knowing his power in general, particularly promiſed to effect his deſires, provided that the young man would agree to lay out his money when received with him; telling him, he would uſe him well therein: but whether he did or no, you may gueſs, for he kept not open ſhop above ſix moneths before he broke, and is now gone for a Souldier, and the Company in general likely to looſe the money. This, replied I, is one of the worſt acts I have yet heard of, if it were intentionally done, for it is an abuſe of the Donors will; but I ſee it is not material with ſome men, if they get money, how they come by it: but I pray, let me hear the reſt of your ſtory. That you ſhall, ſaid the Bookſeller, but firſt let us drink; which he having done, and I pledged, he proceeded, as you may hear in this following Chapter.

CHAP. XXIV.

The Book-ſellers Prentice having diſcovered his Maſters way of Cheating, now diſcovers his own.

THus, ſaid the Bookſeller, have I given you a ſummary account of the moſt part of my Maſters dealing, and the main way how he gained his Eſtate; for at this time he hath a ſhop very well furniſhed with all ſorts of bound Books, and two or three Warehouſes full of Books in quires; he hath above 1000 *l.* owing him by Country-Chapmen; ſome Eſtate he hath in Land and Houſes, and a very good Stock in the Hall, and all this is acquired in ſix years time out of nothing; and in this account of my Maſters dealing, I have acquainted you with the greateſt myſteries of our Trade: but, ſaid I to him, I muſt confeſs you have told me thoſe things I was not only ignorant of, but what I could not have believed could have been done, and ſo great an Eſtate could have been gained by the bookſelling Trade, eſpecially from ſo ſmall a beginning as an *A B C*: but all this while the myſtery is not diſclofed; for though you have told me how your Maſter gets money, yet I hear nothing of your gains, neither indeed can I as yet conjecture how you ſhould be furniſhed with money; for I ſup-

poſe you keep an account of what you receive and pay, and that your Maſter takes care to look into his accounts, that no great matter can be gained that way. 'Tis very true, replied the Bookſeller, he does ſo; and as he is of a falſe knaviſh temper himſelf, ſo he is ſuſpitious of me, and very vigilant and watchful over me: but do you think, that I who have obſerved all his ways and craſty dealing, cannot find a way to be even with him, and put money into my own pocket? and indeed he does allow of my knavery and craſtineſs in over-reaching of others; for he in general is accounted the fitteſt ſervant of our Trade, that can out-wit and over-reach his brother-Bookſeller; for it is not ſo much our keeping Shop, and ſelling a few Books to Scholars, Parſons, Gentlemen, nor ſending to Country-Chapmen, for in that we uſe a conſtant price, and there is not much wit or craft to be uſed therein; but the craftieſt part of our profeſſion conſiſteth in making an Exchange-note with other Bookſellers to the beſt advantage; and there is our greateſt prize: for if any of our Chapmen ſend to us for Books, ſuch as we do not print, and ſuch as we are not at preſent furniſhed withal, then away we go to that Bookſeller who is beſt furniſhed with them, and deſire to make a Note with him, which he (being deſirous to ſort himſelf with ſome of our Books) willingly conſents to; then do we commonly pretend leaſt uſe for thoſe Books we moſt want, otherwiſe we ſhould be ſure to go without them, unleſs we took many of other ſorts, that were little better then waſt paper; and ſo we, by telling our brother

Bookſeller that of ſuch a Book they are almoſt gone, and the like, we put off the greateſt number of our worſt Books, and the feweſt of our beſt; and being indifferent of taking any quantity of thoſe we moſt need, we commonly have moſt put upon us; and ſo are furniſhed with what we deſire: and in this way of exchanging Books for Books, we have the moſt occaſion of exerciſing our wits, and many times receive commendations from our Maſters for ſo doing; and when we meet with one another, the buſineſs being over, triumph over thoſe we have thus outwitted.

This buſineſs of Exchanging brings us Prentices acquainted with each other more then any thing elſe, for that this matter is commonly leſt to our management; and on this acquaintance depends the greateſt part of our profit: for though we can ſometimes when we take money in the Shop put up half a Crown or a Crown for a Book that our Maſter knows not of, yet that is but ſeldome, and little Money is given us, unleſs it be by the better ſort of Cuſtomers, whoſe Books we carry home, and then perhaps we may have a ſhilling or two beſtowed on us; but this is nothing in reſpect of our other profit, which I ſhall now tell you of.

We trading for a great deal to Chapmen into the Country, do print very much, and ſometimes one Book is printed very often, and a number of 25 or 50 cannot be ſo diſcovered: ſometimes we are in fee with the Printer, procure him to print ſuch a number over for us, which he conſents to, that he may do as many

ſor himſelf: and then ſor the manner of our ſelling of them, it is by Combination, Conſederacy, and Correſpondency, which ſome of us Apprentices have with each other; ſor we have our Warehouſe as well as our Maſter, and are furniſhed with much variety; every one of the Combination bringing ſome quantity to this joynt-Stock, of what his Maſter printeth; and then as occaſion ſerveth we ſurniſh each other: but the chieſeſt way of making money of theſe, is by three or four young Bookſellers, who being newly ſet up do buy them of us, it may be two pence in the ſhilling cheaper then they can buy them of our Maſters: we have ready money, or at furtheſt when they have ſold them; and to this end we have commonly one of theſe Bookſellers in every conſiderable place of Trading about Town, and ſometimes we employ a rambling Bookſeller to go a Birding, and offer them at places, and oſtentimes our Maſters buy ſome of their own Books of this Ubiquitarian-Bookſeller; and one or two being intruſted with management of the Stock, gives account to all the reſt; and ſo we divide the profit; at other times we being employed by our Maſters to get in Books for our Country-Chapmen, we inform them that the Book being out of print we cannot have it without ready money, and then we being ordered to get them, (for our Cuſtomers muſt be ſerved) we have them out of our own Stock, and put the ready money into our pockets. Sometimes I have gotten fourty or fifty ſhillings by being partners with one of the young Bookſellers in printing a Pamphlet; and if it be an unlicenſed thing, we ſell them privately to Cuſtomers in the Shop; if

a factious thing, we have our factious Cuſtomers; if obſcene or wanton, we accordingly are provided with thoſe that buy them: and thus with theſe ways, and ſome others which are too long to relate at this time, I can make a ſhift to ſpend fourty or fifty pound a year, to keep my ſuit of private cloaths, and to allow my Wench eight ſhillings a week, to whom I conſtantly pay that Portion; and I think my ſhare of the Stock at preſent may amount to fourty pound. And thus you ſee, that though ſo many thouſands go through the Scriveners hands, and ſo few through mine, yet I can make a ſhift to get ſome money out of our paper, as well as he out of his parchment; and I doubt not, but when I come out of my time, to do as well as the beſt of our trade; for having learnt ſo much in this Art, I queſtion not but I ſhall put it in practice to my advantage.

Thus did he put an end to his Diſcourſe; and drinking a Pot or two more of Beer, having had ſome other merry diſcourſe about the Scriveners Wench, and ſuch like other matters, we parted; he, to go meet with ſome of his brother Bookſellers, to take account of their private Stock; and I, to my Maſters about my ordinary Imployments, ſtill ruminating in my mind of all the paſſages that theſe two Blades the Scrivener and Bookſeller had related to me; and from thence did conclude, that I ſhould find all the reſt of our Clubbing-brethren ſtored with the ſame Diſcourſes; and now I meditated on nothing more then how I might get money enough, for that was the only thing that made crooked things ſtraight; and if a man have enough of that, he may defie all men. It can make knees bow, and

tongues ſpeak againſt the native genius of the groaning heart; it ſupples more then oyl or fomentations, and can ſtiffen beyond the Summers Sun, or the Winters white-bearded cold. In this we differ from the ancient Heathen; they made *Jupiter* their chief God, and we have crowned *Pluto.* He is Maſter of the *Muſes*, and can buy their Voyce; the *Graces* wait on him, *Mercury* is his Meſſenger, *Mars* comes to him for pay, *Venus* is his proſtitute; he can make *Veſta* break her vow, he can have *Bacchus* be merry with him, and *Ceres* feaſt him when he lifts; he is the ſick mans *Æſculapius*, and the *Pallas* of an empty brain; nor can *Cupid* cauſe Love, but by his Golden-headed Arrow. Money is a general man, and without doubt excellently parted: *Petronius* deſcribes his Qualities.

Quiſquis habet nummos, ſecura naviget aura:
Fortunamque ſuo temperet arbitrio.
Vxorem ducat Danaen, ipſumque licebit
Acriſium jubeat credere quod Danaen:
Carmina componat, declamat, concrepat, omnes
Et peragat Cauſas, fitque Catone prior.
Juriſconſultus, paret, non paret: habeto;
Atque eſto, quicquid Servius aut Labeo
Multo loquar: quidvis nummis præſentibus opta,
Et venit: clauſum poſſidet Area Jovem.

The Monyed-man can ſafely ſayl all Seas,
And make his fortune as himſelf ſhall pleaſe:
He can wed Danae, *and command that now*
Acriſius *ſelf that fatal Match allow:*

He can declame, chide, cenſure, Verſes write,
And do all things better then Cato *might.*
He knows the Law, and rules it, hath and is
Whole Servius, *and what* Labeo *could poſſeſs.*
In brief, let rich men wiſh whatſoere they love,
'Twill come, they in a lock'd Cheſt keep a Jove.

And to conclude, as it commands Gods and Goddeſſes, ſo all ſorts of men and women are obedient to him that has the command of this God Money; and therefore I was reſolved to put in for a ſhare of it.

CHAP. XXV.

The Relater with the Scrivener and Bookſeller and their Wenches being merry in a Tavern, fall out with other Company, and are ſent by an Alderman to the Counter. The Relater in revenge cheats the Alderman of his Scarlet Gown, which is converted into Petticoats for the three Wenches.

I Having thus gained an intimate acquaintance with all theſe my Brother-Clubbers, did ſet forth my own good parts; and they having been open with me in the diſcovery of their manner of living, and how they furniſhed themſelves with money even to ſuperfluity, I was as free to them in relating many actions of my forepaſſed life; by which means they found me the more fit for their ſociety: and I having paſſed through variety of conditions, as having been of ſeveral Trades, and informing them of ſeveral myſterious Cheats which I had performed in them, they all took a very great liking to me; but there was none whom I ſo much affected as the Scrivener and Bookſeller, becauſe I found them the beſt ſtored with money; and I often accompanied them to their Wenches, where we had extraordinary Treatments, and ſuch Company as exceeded all the reſt; for I had my laſs as well as they; and though I paid nothing of the reckoning, yet my Wench was often as well provided for as theirs;

for I furniſhed her with Cloaths equal to any of them, and then the leſs money ſerved the turn. We three being one night at a Tavern with our Wenches, where we paſſed a Winters evening in their pleaſing ſociety, our ſpirits being raiſed with wine, and the harmony of Muſick joyned to our Ladies voyces, in which they all three were very excellent; It happened that their harmony begot a deſire in the people in the next Room to be attentive to our Muſick: the Scrivener deſiring his Lady to ſing a particular new Song alone, ſhe conſented thereunto, and performed it very well, with good applauſe: one perſon in the next room, who had given attention thereto, and had lately been in company with the Singer, knowing her Voyce, was reſolved by one means or other to ſee and drink with her; and thereupon leaving his Company, he came into our Room, and civilly asking leave, ſaluted the Ladies, and took acquaintance with the Scriveners Miſtreſs: ſhe being ſomewhat diſpleaſed thereat, in ſhort time took occaſion to tell her friend the Scrivener that ſhe was much troubled at this accident, and deſired his favourable interpretation of this action, for ſhe aſſured him, ſhe only knew this perſon as a retainer to the houſe where ſhe lodged, he coming to another Lady there, and not to her; and withal ſhe deſired him, if he thought fit, to affront and chaſtiſe him for this his unmannerly intruſion. Her friend the Scrivener being thus informed by his Lady, called me and the Bookſeller on one ſide, and acquainted us with the matter; ſo that we ſuddenly reſolved to rid ourſelves of this bold intruder: when we returned to the fire where we

left our unwelcome gueſt and the women, we found him toying with them, and a little more bold then either they or we were willing to permit and allow of; wherefore we gave him ſome angry words, which he being a bluff ſellow retorted, and we ſtriving to force him out of the Room, he ſingle as he was ſet upon us all, to the great affrightment of the Women, who now beginning to ſqueak out, our noiſe occaſioned the reſt of our gueſts Companions who were in the next Room to come into ours, and there ſeeing their Friend ſet on by us three, which indeed being odds, they fell on us to his aſſiſtance: many blows were not enterchanged, before the Maſter of the houſe and others (being called by the noiſe we made, and the clamours of the women) entred the Room; but all they could do, could not part us, ſo eager we were in defending, as we thought, the honour of our Ladies; ſo that the Conſtable was ſent for, and we all ſeized on; but refuſing to be obedient, he forthwith cauſed us to be conducted to the Juſtices, who was an Alderman that lived not far off; we being brought before his Worſhip, being as yet hot as well with Wine as anger, could not agree in our ſtory, nor the occaſion of our quarrel; but glad we were when we ſaw that our Ladies had ſlipt away, as indeed it was but time (for had they gone with us, I doubt *Bridewel* would have been their lodging, and they ſhould have had rapping cheer.) They having thus made their eſcapes who were the cauſe of our difference, and we every one contradicting each other in our Diſ-

courſes, the Alderman made no more ado, but ſent us all to the Counter, both Plaintiffs and Defendants: by ſuch time as we were well ſettled in our Quarters, and had paid our Garniſhes, we all conſidering the matter, and at length converſing with our Adverſaries, put our quarrelſome buſineſs in a fair way to be ended; for the occaſion being a Whore, we all agreed upon one tale to tell the Alderman next morning; when being brought before him, and he finding then no difference between us, ſuppoſing that it was only a drunken quarrel, was at length perſwaded to releaſe us; but before we went, he forced us to pay our fees, and likewiſe ſome money to the poor for being drunk; all which we made a ſhift to do, by borrowing of one another, and ſo we were diſcharged.

Thus was this buſineſs overpaſſed: but though we made a ſhift to hide it from our Maſters, pretending ſome of our wonted excuſes, yet the reſt of the Brethren of the Club were acquainted with it, and we were ſoundly laught at, and our Wenches applauded for their wit in making their timely eſcape, or elſe it would have fared worſe with us as well as them, and our buſineſs muſt have come to our Maſters ears.

This diſgrace ſtuck upon us a great while, for our Companions would often ask us, when we would go and viſit Maſter Alderman again: wherefore I bethought my ſelf of a trick how to be revenged of the Alderman, and thereby cauſe the Diſcourſe to ceaſe: I often going by the Aldermans houſe, ſaw him ſtanding at his door, and

he had a common cuſtome every afternoon to ſtand or ſit there three or four hours together. I waiting my opportunity, went to the Alderman, and asked if his Maid-ſervant was within: which of them, ſaid he, *Nan* or *Suzan? Suzan*, quoth I: yes, ſaid the Alderman, What is your buſineſs with her? May it pleaſe your Worſhip, ſaid I, I was ſent hither to take meaſure of her for ſome new cloaths: What then thou art a Taylor, ſaid he; I replied, yes, and ſo he ſent me in. I being acquainted with the Maids name (and ſeeing the Alderman engaged at the door, ſtill talking with another perſon) asked for *Suzan*: when ſhe came to me, I told her, that her Maſter ſent me in to her, and wiſhed me to ask for his Skarlet Gown, to mend it againſt a feaſting-day then approaching: ſhe knowing her Maſter was at the door, and beleeving my ſtory, went for it (I in the mean time watching whether the Alderman ſtill continued at the door, for if I had ſeen him comming in, I would have made my excuſes and depart) but as good luck would have it, the Maid came and gave me the Gown, and went about her other buſineſs: I wrapping it up under my cloak, went again to the door where Maſter Alderman was ſitting, who asked me, whether I had taken meaſure of his Maid; I told him, yes: What already? ſaid he. Yes, and pleaſe your Worſhip: then thou haſt made haſte, ſaid he; make her Clothes handſome, ſhe's a good Wench, and make haſte with them too, and let me ſee that you work well, and thou mayſt do ſome work for me, and in time thou mayſt have good of the

Wench. I (being troubled with Maſter Aldermans large diſcourſe) only replied, I ſhall, if it pleaſe your Worſhip; and ſo left him, and went my ways to the next Alehouſe, where I applauded my ſelf for my ſo happy contrivance, and ſafe deliverance from Maſter Aldermans impertinences.

After a little ſtay in this Alehouſe, and night coming on, I being thus fraughted with this rich Cargo, ſailed to the Tavern where we uſed to meet, and the Gown being wrapt up in a cloth, I delivered to the Drawer to lay up, and went up into a Room, where calling for a faggot and pint of Wine, I had not ſtaid long ere ſome of our Club came, and in ſhort time all the reſt; we fell to merry-making, and in our jollity ſome of our Company noſed us with Maſter Alderman: well, ſaid I, I ſuppoſe that jobb might coſt us twenty ſhillings a piece, and though Maſter Alderman might put the moſt part of it into his pocket; yet how ſay you, if I can propound a way how to be revenged on him? My two Companions, the Scrivener and the Bookſeller, told me, if I could do it, they would give me twenty ſhillings a piece; a match, ſaid I, I'le be judg'd by the Company: and thereupon I told them the ſtory, and how I had cheated Maſter Alderman of his Skarlet-Gown; and to make good my word, cauſed it to be brought up, and ſhew'd before them: very well pleaſed was the Scrivener and Bookſeller, and all the reſt amazed at the boldneſs of my adventure, which was by all applauded for a great piece of wit, and my money was by them accordingly paid me; then after a cup

or two of Wine, conſideration was had, what ſhould be done with the Gown, and how it ſhould be diſpoſed of, for we all knew it was hazardous and dangerous to diſpoſe of it as it was : ſo after many propoſitions and conſultations, it was at length generally agreed on, that I ſhould cut it in pieces, and out of Maſter Aldermans Gown I ſhould make three Petticoats, which ſhould be beſtowed on our three *Madonas* ; and this adjudged very fit and equitable, that they having endured part of the brunt, ſhould receive the whole prize: this I aſſented to ; and the Scrivener and Bookſeller, in regard the Gown was mine, gave me each of them twenty ſhillings a piece more, for their ſhare of the cloath ; and alſo they between them furniſht me with a rich gold and ſilver Lace, to be put upon my Ladies Petticoat, equal and alike to that which was put on theirs : and this was an end of the adventure with Maſter Alderman, of whom we never enquired how he and his maid *Suzan* agreed about the Gown.

CHAP. XXVI.

The Relater and ſeveral others of the Clubbing-Prentices aſſiſt the Drugſter in putting off of ſome of his Commodities; he gives them gratuities, and relates a notable Cheat by his Maſter put upon an Iron-monger.

IN this manner did we ſpend our time; and though our Maſters gained more money, and dayly increaſed their Eſtates, yet we enjoyed the greater pleaſure in each others ſociety: and now we being all acquainted with one anothers ways, aſſiſted each other in all things, and there was no want for ourſelves or Wenches, who were often at our meetings, and aſſiſted in our mirth.

I remember one evening, a young man, a Drugſter, who was one of our Club, told us that we muſt all of us aſſiſt him in a matter he was about, and he ſhould not only gain a good opinion of his Maſter, but we ſhould have a Piece or two to ſpend; we hearing there was convenience and profit, agreed together, ſoon conſented to do our utmoſt, and therefore deſired him to acquaint us with the matter: he thereupon told us, that his Maſter had lately bought a parcel of Drugs of two or three ſorts, which did coſt him about 1000 *l.* in hopes of great gain, for they were at double the price that he would af-

ſord his at; but they being too much for one mans ſale, he offered to ſell good part of them to ſome of the Trade; but they refuſed to buy, unleſs they might have them cheaper then he was willing to afford them, pretending that they had no need of that Commodity, being ſufficiently furniſhed with the ſame; although we were very certain that they could have none of it, there being none to be had in all *London*, till of late my Maſter bought this parcel that came from beyond Sea: Now my Maſter being deſirous to ſell his Commodity, hath conſidered of a way how to make his brother-Drugſters come to him, and pray him to ſell it to them at his price; that way is thus:

He hath deſired me to get ſome of my acquaintance to go to moſt of the Drugſters in and about *London*, and pretending to be Apothecaries and others that need thoſe Commodities, to enquire for them, and beſpeak quantities thereof; and then he knows, that not being able of themſelves to furniſh them, they will repair to him, and give him his price. Oh! ſaid the Bookſeller, have you learned that trick? I am very well acquainted with this manner of trade; for we commonly uſe this ſlight to ſell our Books: for when we have printed a Book that we doubt will not ſell without preferring, and more ado than ordinary, then we not onely Title it upon Poſts, put it into News-books, and uſe ſeveral other ways to make it famous; but we ſometimes ſend ſeveral of our acquaintance and friends to moſt Bookſellers ſhops to inquire

for this new Book; and they coming ſo one after another, at length Maſter Bookſeller is perſwaded to buy ſome of them; nay, ſometimes, the more to encourage the Bookſellers to buy ſome quantities, we allow our friends to lay out ſome moneys with them, and buy ſeveral of them; and ſo the Bookſeller will commonly, if he ſell one or two, buy ſix or a dozen; and by this means our moneys come in again with profit. Well, reply'd the Drugſter, this courſe muſt we take with theſe Drugs, or elſe they may prove a very Drug to my Maſter; for he hath ſerved ſome of our Trade ſo many tricks already, that they are very cautious how they deal with him; but this trick of ſending friends to ask for a Commodity he hath often uſed, neither did he learn it of the Bookſeller: but there happened an extraordinary chance ſometime ſince, and from that experience he hath taken this courſe.

For there was a perſon who is uſed to make Syringes, which Chirurgions and others uſe to ſquirt withal in ſeveral Diſtempers; and this man being out of imployment, made a great quantity of them, and laid them by him; but not knowing how to diſpoſe of them, he bethought him of this way of ſending ſome friends to inquire for them: and ſo well did he manage his buſineſs, that by employing perſons to enquire of Drugſters and Apothecaries for them, he not onely ſold all he had made by him, but in leſs than a quarter of a year, he took above 200*l.* for this Commodity: and this my

Maſter took notice of, and I ſuppoſe made a preſident of, and now reſolves upon the ſame courſe to put off his Drugs; wherefore I deſire your utmoſt aſſiſtance herein, and I ſhall when you pleaſe ſpend a Piece or two in a Collation. All our Club-fraternity agreed on this, and promiſed to be active here: and thus reſolving on our next time of meeting, we parted.

I for my part, the next day accoutring my ſelf in a Country Gentile-garb, went to ſeveral Drugſters, and asked for ſeveral Drugs, whoſe names I had gotten; but amongſt all, I more earneſtly deſired a good quantity of thoſe that were to be thus put off, telling them I was a Country-Apothecary, and ſhould call three or four days after again, and lay out a conſiderable ſum of money with them. I having done this for my part, and the reſt of our aſſociates having been as diligent, we meeting three days after together, our Drugſter told us, that his Maſter had ſold all his Commodities to very great profit; and therefore, ſaid he, This Collation, and each of you a Crown more to buy Gloves, is my Maſters charge, and he deſires you to accept thereof; which we accordingly did, being glad we had done ſo good ſervice to him and his Maſter.

I underſtanding by this, that there were tricks and cheats in this Trade as well as others, was deſirous to be acquainted with the manner of their Trading; and he being but a Novice, told me, he could not tell me much of it, but he was very ſenſible that there was much knavery in

that Myſtery, in mixing and ſophiſticating their Drugs, and getting the ſpirits of ſome of them away, and renewing it in others, as ſerved to their profit: and, purſued he, I have one trick whereby my Maſter gets ſome money in a year; for it being cuſtomary to give a Pipe of Tobacco to any one that comes into the Shop, and deſires it, I give them of that which is very good; and they liking thereof, and the price, commonly buy of the ſame, and ſometimes a quantity, deſiring it may be ſtill of the ſame they have taſted; the which I promiſe to do, and before their eyes take it out of the ſame box; but the knack of it is this, it is for all that a different and worſer ſort of Tobacco; for the Tobacco that I gave them as a taſte, is onely placed in one corner of the box for that purpoſe, and ſo it goes off, as if it were all of the ſame; and ſometimes we put off a whole Roll of Tobacco in the ſame manner: for the outſide-roll is of good Spaniſh right, but all the inner-part is Mundungoes, worth a groat a Cart-load.

But this is nothing to what ways my Maſter hath; and he lately exerciſed his wits to a pretty profitable account, and thus it was: My Maſter among other ſorts of Drugs, had bought a quantity of Dragons-bloud, being pieces of wood, dipped, as is ſuppoſed, or rather pretended, in Dragons-bloud; and this is good in Phyſick, and for other uſes: this Commodity not proving very good, my Maſter had a great deſire to put it off, but could not get any body to buy of it: he had been not only with Drugſters,

but alſo with ſome Iron-mongers to ſell it, for they uſe it about their Locks, and other Iron-work, to keep them from ruſt; but no perſon was willing to deal with him about it. My Maſter had a Neighbour that was an Iron-monger, whom he had a great deſire to deal withal; but he being a wary young man, and hearing that my Maſter was a ſnap, refuſed all dealing with him: and ſome words paſſed that diſpleaſed my Maſter, and therefore he reſolved to be avenged; and thereupon having deſigned his buſineſs, with the help of two Confederates, he thus puts it in execution.

He gave a ſmall quantity of this Dragons-bloud to one of his Confederates, who having full inſtructions, went to the Iron-mongers houſe, and ſeeing him ſtanding at the door, asked him if he wanted not ſome of that Commodity, ſhewing the ſame to him: No, ſaid the Iron-monger. I was informed, ſaid the man, that you ſometimes deal in it, and was recommended by a friend to come to you; and if you pleaſe to deal with me, I ſhall uſe you very kindly. To this the Iron-monger replyed, that he needed not any of it. But, ſaid the other, I ſuppoſe you ſell of it to others ſometimes, and may therefore do me a courteſie, and your ſelf too, for I have not a ſhop to ſell it in, and am a ſtranger; wherefore, if you pleaſe, I ſhall leave this parcel with you, and you putting it on your ſtall may happen on a Cuſtomer, which if you do, I can furniſh you with more; and thus you, without laying out any money, may get ſome profit. The Iron-monger hearing of this, and con-

ceiving the man to be honeſt and harmleſs, conſented to his deſire, entertained the condition and the goods, and enquired further of the price; the man telling him that he underſtood it was worth three ſhillings *per* pound, but he would willingly take two ſhillings eight pence, becauſe he might have profit; and telling him that he would call on him in a weeks time: and they at this time parted.

And thus the Iron-monger having received the Commodity, put ſome of it out every day on his ſtall, till at length a man coming by, and ſeeing that to lye there, and the Maſter of the ſhop at the door, asked him the price thereof; the Iron-monger told him three ſhillings *per* pound. The Cuſtomer deſired to look further into it, deſiring to know how much he had of it: Truely, ſaid the Iron-monger, I cannot tell, but I ſuppoſe, if we agree, I can furniſh you with a good quantity. Why, ſaid the Cuſtomer, I will give you two ſhillings eight pence *per* pound for it, if you have 500 *lib.* of it. Well, ſaid the Iron-monger, call here a day or two hence, and I will reſolve you, and it is like we may deal together: Thus at preſent they parted. But he came again the next day, and the day following, pretending great earneſtneſs to buy the Commodity: in the mean time the Iron-monger waited and watched narrowly to ſee and ſpeak with the man that left it there, but could not meet with him, for he ſtayed away on purpoſe; and this Cuſtomer that came to buy was likewiſe the other of my Maſters Confederates, and ſent by him for that purpoſe. At

length the Iron-monger ſtanding at his door, ſaw the man who left the Dragons bloud paſſing by his door, and called to him, and then diſcourſed ſeriouſly with him about the matter, as, what would be his loweſt price, and what quantity he had? To both theſe Queſtions he anſwered, He would take two ſhillings ſix pence; and the quantity he had was 500 *lib.* The Iron-monger hearing this, and reſolving now to deal, told him, that he thought it was too dear; but if he would take two ſhillings four pence, he thought he might buy all his quantity. To this the Seller replyed, That it was too cheap; but taking all, and paying him ready mony, he would do it. The Iron-monger replyed, That ready money was two months: but, ſaid he, If I deal, you ſhall have half down at the delivery, and the other half at three months: to this they both agreed. But the Iron-monger being cautious, would not at preſent fully conclude, referring the ending the Bargain to two days, in the mean time reſolving to ſee if his Cuſtomer came that was to buy; and then enquiring the name and habitation of the Seller, they parted.

Long had not the Iron-monger waited, but his buying Cuſtomer came by, and as earneſtly as formerly deſired to buy the Commodity; the which now the Iron-monger agreed to ſell at two ſhillings eight pence *per* pound, and to be paid at weighing; and that he might be ſure of his Cuſtomer, he takes ten ſhillings in part of payment, and appoints two days thence to finiſh the bargain. Thus did the Iron-monger reckon to gain 500 Groats, which is 8 *l.* 3 *s.* 4 *d.* Be-

ſides, he was reſolved to have all ready money, and to pay but half; but he reckoned without his Hoſt, as I ſhall preſently tell you: for the Seller of the Dragons-bloud coming the next day, finiſhed his bargain, delivered his Commodity, received his money, and took a Bill from the Iron-monger for the moiety of his money to be paid in three months. But now the Iron-monger had the Commodity, he might go look for a Cuſtomer; for he that left the ten ſhillings came no more, and the Commodity lay ſtill on his hands; at which he was fretted, but could not help himſelf.

My Maſter having thus managed this affair by theſe two Confederates, received the mony, and had the Bill aſſigned to him, giving both his Confederates ſomething for their pains.

He having thus done the Iron-monger's buſineſs, was not contented with the profit alone, but was reſolved to vex him; and therefore when he paſſed by his ſhop, he asked him if he would buy any Dragons-bloud. No, ſaid the other, I can ſell you ſome. I'll buy, ſaid my Maſter; but when he ſaw it, and heard the price, he told him, No, he could ſell him as good as that for 12 *d. per* pound. At this the Iron-monger was more vexed; but not knowing how to help himſelf, was forced to reſt contented; at length the three months came, and then my Maſter was reſolved to ſhew all his anger, and vex the Iron-monger more, and therefore went himſelf to demand the money that was due: the Iron-monger anſwered him, that he owed him none: Whereupon he produced his bill, and a

Letter of Attorney; and then he too late perceived how he had been ſerved. For my Maſter told him, that now he would be even with him, for refuſing to deal with him, and abuſing him. The other faid, it was a cheat, and he would make him bring out the party that bought it, giving him ten ſhillings in part of payment. That ſhall I do quickly, faid my Maſter, but it will be ſmall to your gain: and then told him the name of the man, and that he was not worth a farthing, and a Priſoner in the Kings-bench. At this the Iron-monger being much more vexed then before, told my Maſter that he would not pay him, and bid him take his courſe; the which he did the next morning, and arreſting him, ſoon brought the caſe to a tryal, and having an abſolute bill for payment of the money, caſt the Iron-monger; who adviſing with his Lawyers, went to *Weſtminſter* for a *Writ of Error*, which he gained: but when he came back with it, thinking to ſtop Execution, he found that he came too late; for my Maſter doubting ſome ſuch buſineſs, never left till he ſerved the Execution, ſo that when the poor Iron-monger came back with his *Writ of Error*, he found the Bayliffs and my Maſter in his ſhop, in poſſeſſion of his goods; and he being out of Moneys at preſent, was forced to let my Maſter have all his Dragons-bloud again at twelve pence *per* pound, and ſo in that and other Commodities paying his Debt and Charges, and giving each other general Releaſes (which my Maſter earneſtly inſiſted on, and without which my Maſter would do nothing, the Iron-monger being in

a ſtrait) they made an end of this bargain: and now the Iron-monger, when he came to a ſecond reckoning of his bargain, found, that inſtead of getting 8 *l.* 3 *s.* 4 *d.* he had loſt 33 *l.* 3 *s.* 4 *d.* beſides all his Coſt; and my Maſter thus having gained by his Commodity, ſold it ſince to another for one ſhilling ſix pence *per* pound. And this, ſaid the Drugſter, is but one of my Maſters ways to get money.

This young fellow had taken a great deal of pains to diſcover every particular of his Maſters late bargain: from what he had related, I concluded the Maſter to be a very cunning practitioner in the Myſterious Art of *Knavery*, and therefore I was deſirous to be acquainted with him; and knowing that he was but a young man himſelf, and alſo deſirous of acquaintance, I found no great difficulty to attain to my deſires, which I ſoon after accompliſhed, as I ſhall relate to you in the next Chapter.

CHAP. XX.

The Relater and the Drugſters Maſter come acquainted, being concerned in Tryals at Law: their ſeveral Caſes they relate to each other.

MY Maſter having much dealing, had many Debts owing him, and he was forced to ſue ſome perſons to get in his monies; and I having delivered a parcel of Clothes, was *ſub-pœna*'d to attend to teſtifie the ſame in Court, upon a Tryal which my Maſter was to have with his Debtor. I attended the Court when Tryal of the Cauſe ſhould be call'd, ſeveral hours; and there did I meet with the young Drugſter, who was likewiſe waiting upon ſome ſuch like occaſion: we both having leiſure, and his ſervant having told him that I principally aſſiſted in putting off his Drugs, he to gratifie me, offered me a Pint of Wine. I accepted his kindneſs, and to the Tavern we went, where he again thanked me for the courteſie I had done him; and then he enquired my buſineſs at the Court. I told him, it was upon a Tryal of my Maſters, who ſued one for money for a ſuit of Clothes. That is ſtrange, ſaid he, that any ſhould refuſe to pay for work when done. True, ſaid I, but he pretends that there is ſomewhat more then ordinary in the Caſe, as indeed there is, if well

underſtood; and knowing you to be ingenious, I ſhall relate it to you. A perſon had occaſion to have a ſuit of Clothes made, and would not entruſt my Maſter to buy the Cloth; but having enquired how much would do the buſineſs, my Maſter told him five yards and a half, to make a ſuit and large coat. The other ſuppoſing that five yards would do the buſineſs, and the half yard be ſaved, bought but five; and bringing it home, deſired my Maſter to cut it out before him; and if there wanted any more cloth, it ſhould be ſupplyed. My Maſter ſeeing himſelf diſtruſted, was reſolved to be even with his Cuſtomer; and to cutting of it out he went: firſt, he cut out the Doublet, and then the Breeches; but inſtead of one pair of Breeches, he cut out two pair, perſwading the Cuſtomer that it was but one; and when he came to cut out the coat, there was a great deal of cloth wanting; ſo that the Gentleman was forced to buy a yard more of cloth, the which he ſaw cut out likewiſe; and though he was cheated before his face, could not diſcover it; my Maſter ſerving him well enough: for whereas he intended but to get half a yard of cloth by him, he now ſaved a whole one.

The ſuit was made up, and the Gentleman wore it: but as yet not being fully ſatisfied, coming into company with another Taylor, he asked how much cloth might be in that ſuit and coat. The Taylor replyed, Five yards: the Gentleman ſaid he bought ſix, and ſaw it all cut out and put into the clothes. The Taylor wondring hereat, told him, that he would make him a ſuit

and coat full as large as that with five yards. The Gentleman agreed; and more cloth was bought, delivered to the Taylor, and the ſuit made accordingly. The Gentleman not as yet having paid my Maſter his bill, refuſed to do it, pretending he is cheated, but not knowing how; and this day we are to have a Tryal, and I queſtion not, but I who am my Maſters chief witneſs, ſhall be able to out wit the other Maſter-Taylor, who is here in Court ready to teſtifie againſt us. How do you mean to order your matters? ſaid the Drugſter. Truely, ſaid I, in one word, I will make oath, that all the Gentlemans ſix yards of cloth was cut out and made up, in Doublet, Breeches and Coat, as indeed it was; but I do not ſay, how many pair of Breeches; and I ſuppoſe, they not ſuſpecting me, will not be curious in asking the queſtion.

The Drugſter was ſo well pleaſed in my relation of the ſtory, that he told me his Caſe, which ſaid he, is this. I have had ſome little misfortunes in the world, and people have lately called on me for money, more than I could well pay at preſent; and one perſon particularly has been ſo outragiouſly fooliſh, as to ſay that I was a Bankrupt, and that I would never pay him: now I have brought my Action againſt him for ſlander and defamation, and hope to get ſo great damages againſt him, as he ſhall be willing to forgive me my debt: and this will be a good leading Card to muzzle the mouths of the reſt of my Creditors, who indeed are ſo civil as to come into Court, and teſtifie in my behalf.

This Caſe being well managed (ſaid I) may be very conſiderable with you, and turn to your profit and credit both. Our Wine and Diſcourſe being ended, we both went into the Court, where I heard his Tryal ſo well managed, as he recovered 200*l.* damage: and my Maſter, with my evidence, recovered his Debt; and then threatened to ſue the Gentleman for defamation: he hearing thereof, and ſeeing how great damages were given to one there preſent, upon the ſame account, preſently made his Compoſition with my Maſter, and gave him ten pound to put up the buſineſs. My Maſter gave me 20*s.* to ſpend, which I did in Wine and good Company; and the Drugſter having had this ſucceſs, was now more contented than ever, and his credit grew high in the City, ſo that he was intruſted with ſome thouſands; but he and I being after that very intimate, I perſwaded him at a convenient time to give me an account of his life and actions; I having formerly told him of many of mine. We being planted at a Tavern, and no perſon to interrupt us, he began as followeth.

CHAP. XXVIII.

The Drugſter in relating his Life, diſcovers ſeveral Cheats which he performed under the Cloak of Religion; as alſo how he cheated his Maſters Siſter of her Maiden-head and Eſtate; and ſeveral Cheats in Smuckling.

THough the whole courſe of my Life, from my Infancy to this time, hath been a continued piece of *Knavery*, I having been of many Trades, and moſt Factions in Religion, in which I have always been a very great ſtickler: yet I ſhall not give you any account of my minority, omitting all my actions till I came to about twenty years of age, when I had gained ſome experience in the world, and had learned how to play my Cards to the beſt advantage.

I ſerved an Apprentiſhip with a Maſter, whoſe whole Family, conſiſting of himſelf, Wife, Siſter, and four Servants, was an abſolute Compendium of moſt Religious Factions then practiſed in *England:* He himſelf was a ſtrict rigid Preſbyterian; his Wife, a Ranter; his Siſter, an Anabaptiſt; three of the Servants Independants, but of ſeveral Churches and Perſwaſions; and I, though an Independant, being of all Religions, yet was of none at all, that gave them all the hearing; and with my Maſter was a Presbyterian, and would ordinarily accompany him in his

long-winded prayers, which being filled with tautologies and nonſence, he eſteemed, and often uſed, believing himſelf to be aſſiſted with a Divine Spirit. Many abſurdities he committed in his Devotion, as praying for the Reformation of his Family, and pointing out a time when he ſhould or would have a return of his Prayers, at which time he would charge Providence with the fault; he having ſtrictly obſerved all the Commandments, in Faſting, Praying, relieving the Brethren, and performing all other Duties which Sir *John* his Ghoſtly father had impoſed on him. He would often recount the particular enormities of his Wife and Family, and how ſhe lay out from him three nights together in a week, and where ſhe was; and would earneſtly pray for, either her converſion or confuſion. Many other impertinencies would he commit, which would be too tedious to me to recount: but in general, I found his zeal to be a weakneſs in his brain, and he was continually led about as Sir *John Presbyter* directed.

My Miſtreſs was likewiſe led about by thoſe of her Gang, which were abſolute Libertines, affording themſelves all manner of pleaſure, and denying themſelves the injoyment of nothing they could purchaſe; and ſhe would pretend Religion in all her frollicks: for ſhe would ſay, That *no ſin was imputed to the Saints*; and indeed it was no ſin, unleſs ſhe her ſelf thought it ſo. That ſhe, or any other Siſter, might lie with another Brother, was accounted a general maxime amongſt them, eſpecially if they choſe their time

when their Husbands are aſleep, which they termed to be dead, and therefore might then do it without breach of any Commandment. She would be very coſtly both in her Apparel and diets alleadging, that it was not fit, that the Body *which was a ſacred Temple*, ſhould be courſly either clothed or fed. I had a great mind to have been of her Religion, becauſe there was ſo much freedom and enjoyments therein; but my Maſter kept me in a little too ſtrictly; and my Miſtreſs keeping company with the High-boys, ſlighted the tender of my ſervice. Thus having failed in this attempt, I made my way to my Miſtreſſes Siſter, who was an Anabaptiſt; ſhe I often waited on by my Miſtreſſes commands, and at length was admitted to be one of the Brethren in the Conventicle, whereof ſhe was a Siſter; I profeſſed a great deal of zeal for that way, and my Maſter often inſtructed me in Scripture, I ſoon from a proficient became a Preacher, and was of great eminency amongſt them.

Thus did I ſpend my time till my Apprenticeſhip was out, and I was a freeman; and then did I begin to look about me, to ſee what I might get for my ſelf: for I had never undertaken this courſe of Teaching, but in hopes to gain my Miſtreſſes Siſter; and ſhe ſtill put me off till I was out of my time, pleading tenderneſs of Conſcience would not permit her to give me any enjoyment of her before Marriage, and that could not lawfully be done, till my time was out; which being come, I freſhly courted her,

and ſhe gave me the hearing, but ſtill put me off deſiring me firſt to ſettle my ſelf in the World. I now believing that ſhe intended to delude me was reſolved to play the ſame hand at Cards with her; and perſwading her that I ſtill gained ſomewhat of an Eſtate by my dealings in the World, I ſpent ſome moneys on her, and taking my opportunity gained my ends upon her; for pretending that I had lately made a bargain, whereby I ſhould get 100*l.* if I had fifty pound ready money more then my own, which was likewiſe fifty pound; She having moneys by her, willingly conſented to lend me fifty pound, provided that ſhe might ſee the disburſing thereof. I then thinking to kill two Birds with one ſtone, readily conſented; and heartily thanking her, deſired her to provide her ſelf to go with me next Tide to *Graveſend*, where I was to lay out the moneys: ſhe did accordingly, and carrying fifty pound with her, I having raiſed ſuch another ſum, we took boat and made for *Graveſend*, where when we arrived, I left her to reſt herſelf at an Inn, and went on board a Ship that was newly come from the Indies, and bought as much Indigo as came to 150*l.* I had it a very good penny worth, but not ſo good as to perſwade her that I ſhould gain 100*l.* by it, which I had promiſed: wherefore that I might make out the matter to be plain to her, I engaged the Seaman I had dealt withal to ſecrecy, and made this bargain, that I would pay him 100*l.* down, and pay the reſt in two moneths, telling him that I was a great dealer. He believ-

ing me without much difficulty, not only confented to this, but alſo to ſay, that he had but 100 l. for all the Commodity; we having thus agreed, went to my Sweet-hearts Chamber, and there concluded our bargain before her; who having ſome skil in the price of that Commodity, did believe the bargain to be as profitable as I alledged to her, and freely laid down her money, which together with my fifty pound was paid to the Seaman, and the goods delivered into a Lighter to be carried to *London*, and delivered according to order.

This affair being diſpatch'd, I was reſolved to drive the nayl home a little further, and as I had got the money, ſo to get the maid; wherefore I pretending expedition, told her, it would be moſt convenient for us to ride home: ſhe wholly confiding in me, conſented thereto, and a horſe was procured to carry us double; mounted we were, and ſo advanced on our journy; but pretending ſome buſineſs, I made an halt at the next Town home wards, where I did my Horſe the unkindneſs to prick him in the foot, that he might halt, and not be able to carry us through that night; this being done, we again mounted, and I fell to thanking my Miſtreſs for this great favour, not only in aſſiſting me with her purſe, but accommodating me with her Company; and now, ſaid I, I hope you will no longer delay me the enjoyment of yourſelf, and the reſt of your Eſtate. Truly, ſaid ſhe, this days action hath reſolved me of all doubts, and now I have ſo good opinion of you, that I ſhall no

longer delay our marriage, then ſhall ſtand with your conveniency. To this I returned anſwer full of love and kindneſs. Our horſe by this time felt the effects of my work, for he halted ſo much, that we could only go a foot pace, and with much difficulty came to the next Town, where we were forced to alight; and it now growing late, and impoſſible to get to *London* that night, we reſolved to take up our quarters for the preſent.

I having placed my Miſtreſs in a Private Chamber, went into the Stable, and ſoon removed the obſtruction that hindred our horſe from going, ſo that by the next morning he was well enough able to travel, I left him to the care of the Hoſtler, and went up to my Miſtreſs, who expected me to ſupper, which I had ordered to be provided for us, and that being ready, I invited our Landlady to be a gueſt: though our Commons were but ſhort, being only one Chicken, yet I made a long Grace, which according to our cuſtome, might amount to a praycr; and I remember that among other matters, I prayed that our horſe might be ſo well recovered, as that he might be able to carry us next day to *London*: our Landlady ſoon underſtanding what kind of Gueſts ſhe had, believing that ſhe ſhould get little by our Company, was deſirous of leaving it, which ſhe did, by pretending buſineſs, and ſo we had the whole Chicken left us for our own eating, we hardly made or left any bones of it, ſo hungry we were. Supper being ended, we went to the fire, and I deſigning my buſi-

neſs, call'd for a Quart of Claret, which we burn'd, ſweetned, and drank off; and by this time my Miſtreſs was ſo ſweet upon me, that we talked very familiarly and pleaſantly, and oftentimes I interlaced our Diſcourſes with kiſſes and amorous ſighs, to which I was welcomed, and many times invited; I then called for another Quart of Wine, which we likewiſe drank off; and then I found my Miſtreſs was very full of the Creature, ſo that ſhe drew neer to the bed, and at length caſt her ſelf thereon; I was not long aſter her, but lay down likewiſe, and firſt beginning with embraces and kiſſes, in a little time I gained poſſeſſion of all my endeavors ſhe lying as faſt aſleep all the while; but when I had done, and was again laid by her, ſhe ſtarted up, and ſeemed to be very angry with me; but I ſuppoſing that it was becauſe I had ſo ſoon done, catched hold of her, and attempted to be at her again; but in vain did I endeavour it, for ſhe then began to be angry, reproaching me with diſhoneſty, and uſing many canting terms, which I omit: I told her, what was done could not be undone, and therefore comforted her, and told her all ſhould be well by our ſudden Marriage: thus did I appeaſe her, and we ſoon agreed upon every thing; ſo that though I was appointed another Chamber, which I pretended to lodge in, yet I lay all night with her. The next morning we aroſe betime; and mounting our horſe, who was now well enough, we ſoon arrived at *London*, where for the preſent we parted. I having thus gained my ends of this

woman, having part of her Eſtate in my poſſeſſion, and by the enjoyment of her perſon having the command of the reſt, was reſolved only to abuſe her; ſtrip her of what ſhe had, and ſo leave her: for I found no ſuch ſweetneſs in my nights lodging with her, but what I might expect from another; having before that taſted woman in the enjoyment of two or three of our Siſters, which paſſages I omit, and tell this to acquaint you how this woman undid herſelf by her Covetouſneſs, for had ſhe not diſtruſted me with her money, I ſhould have married her, but now my minde was otherwiſe bent.

I received my Goods, and now my ſtock being much encreaſed by this fifty pound, and the profit of my bargain; I paid the Seaman, and proceeded in Trading: and though I had little skill in forreign Commodities yet I ventured at all, neither did I want Money, for inſtead of paying back the fifty pound to my Miſtreſs, I ſoon after had 100 *l.* more, and yet ſhe could not perſwade me to marriage, I ſtill pretending multiplicity of buſineſs: at length, all her portion, being 400 *l.* got into my hands, I only paid her with a nights lodging, which now and then we had together; but as to marriage, I ſtill pretended one reaſon or other to defer it.

I not only proceeded in my Merchandizing, but continued in my preaching at our uſual Conventicles, where I was become very famous, and a great diſputant; but at length I finding there was little to be gotten by them (and my

principle being always to gain what I could) I became now almoſt weary of them, and willing to leave that Congregation for another that courted me, but I was reſolved ere I leſt them to make ſome uſe of them, and get ſomewhat of them. I thus laid my Plot: I gave a bond to a Confederate for 100 *l*, pretending that I owed ſo much to him; I gave out, that I would on ſuch a day not only preach to my Congregation, but alſo Diſpute with any oppoſer on ſeveral Articles. The time being come, I had a full Auditory, and performed my Preachment and Diſputation to the general ſatisfaction of all? and then appointed that the next day I would hold forth ſome other points, that had not as yet been diſputed of, inviting all the Congregation, and all others that would come, to meet me in a larger room then that was wherein we exerciſed at preſent. Thus having finiſhed my Diſcourſe I diſmiſſed my Auditors; but I was no ſooner out of the houſe, but I was ſeized on by a bailiff, in Execution for 200 *l*. for my Confederate who had the bond, had brought it to Judgment: I was then accompanied by two or three of my Congregation, who much wondring at the buſineſs, deſired the Bailiff to have patience, and go into the next Houſe, which we did; and the Caſe being opened, I confeſſed the Debt, withal alleadging that I was not at preſent able to pay it, having lately ventured moſt of my Eſtate to Sea. Thoſe of my Congregation hearing this (and being much grieved that their Paſtor ſhould be thus ſnatch'd from them, eſpe-

cially when he had deſerved ſo well) ſent for ſome more of their brethren, who were monied men; and ſo among them they paid the debt, and I was diſcharged: but ſoon after this, I left them, and they were forced to make a Collection or gathering among themſelves to reimburſe themſelves their moneys; and my Miſtreſs, who had been all this while delayed by me with fair words, made her complaints to the brethren, but to no purpoſe, for ſhe received no redreſs or ſatisfaction, I having now quite left them and their faction for another, where by reaſon of my ability in preaching, I was entertained, and an accord made between me and my quondam Miſtreſs, I only giving her back fifty pound of her four hundred; we being now abſolutely parted from one another, ſhe receiving no other ſatisfaction of me, either for her many nights lodging or money, then fifty pound, which ſhe willingly received, believing me to be a beggar; my new Congregation voluntarily raiſing that money for me for that purpoſe.

Thus was I quit of her, and had gained five hundred pound in my pocket, only under the cloak of Religion; and having ſuch ſucceſs, I in ſhort time diſcovered my ſelf to be rich, by buying many bargains of good value, paying ready mony, and raiſed my ſelf to ſo high a reputation, that I won a widdow of an indifferent fortune to be my wife, and ſo ſettled my ſelf in the World.

As for my preaching-trade, I finding that it had already done me as much ſervice as I expe-

cted from it, I left it, for I had now a wife and money, and for that end, and to get them, I took it up, and being provided with both, I left it, but especially finding that it grew every day into disesteem, it being about the time of his Majesties happy Return; when instead of a preaching Fanatick; I quickly faced about, and leaving my congregational friends, I enquired out, and procured Cavalier acquaintance, so that I (who a little before the Kings coming home, was used to wear short Hair, and was modest and precise in my habit) had now a large Perriwig, a great Plume of Feathers, and all other accoutrements accordingly, being still diligent on all occasions to associate my self with the Captain and chief Officers of the Trained Bands of our Company, into whose acquaintance and Society I soon insinuated my self, by my Gallantry in my habit, and expences in Taverns being conformable.

Thus did I become a Gentleman, and from a Precisian a Prodigal, nay, an Antick, and every thing, what not? that I might please all: for instead of a Prayer-book, or some other Fanatical piece of divinity, I now carried in my pocket, either Cards or Dice, and so great a love I had to *Hocus Pocus*, that all their Tools, *viz.*, Box of Counters, Balls, Cups, and other Trinkets which are made use of in that mysterious function, were all my Companions: having learned confidence when I was a Preacher, I was now the better emboldned to stare my Spectators in the face, while I cunningly enough

performed my ſeats of activity; and ſuch a readineſs I had, that I was accounted an able proficient. I ſpent ſo much time in theſe fooleries, that I almoſt loſt my ſelf; and now having a wife and family to maintain, I found my Eſtate ſo far to decreaſe, that I was forced to look after my buſineſs, and fall to Merchandizing: but having loſt a conſiderable part of my Eſtate which I had adventured at Sea, I was reſolved, as I ſaid, to truſt no more to that Element, and not to let my Eſtate go out of my ſight; wherefore I ſtill as ſhipping came in, went on board, either in the *Downs*, *Portſmouth*, or *Plymouth*, and there buying good bargains, which the Seamen, newly come home would afford for ready Money, I began to prick up again, and have Money at command; I then bought me a ſmall Pinnace or ſmall Pleaſure boat; and with that went on board of Ships, bought Goods, and made a ſhift to ſtow as much on board privately, that I ſaved much by the cuſtomes and other duties. This Trade I drove a long time, gaining much by ſtealing Duties; neither did I care what Goods I dealt in, having Cuſtomers of all ſorts and Trades, who knowing that I drave this Trade, employed me to buy for them, agreeing the prizes before hand: but I was ſnap'd one time, and all my goods ſeized for not paying duties, and an Information put into the Exchequer againſt me: I finding that it would be but a folly to contend there, agreed with the Informer, and he ſuffered me to caſt him; ſo that I got off for a ſum of money, but

I gained much experience thereby, ſo that I then began a new Trade, and would engage many of my Friends to go and buy Goods on board of Ships, and if they got them clear from the Ships-ſides it was enough, for I would come immediately in another Boat, as if a ſtranger, and ſeize the Goods as forfeited for want of the payment of duties, and ſo ſecure them from any other ſeizure; and if any other perſon came to ſeize them, I then pretended it to be my buſineſs, having made the firſt ſeizure, but if we were not met with by another, then we paſſed clear without any more trouble: nay, ſo bold and confident was I grown in this kind of Trade, called *Smuckling*, that I have had fifty and an hundred pound at a time given me to go over into *Holland* or *France* in a Ship which hath brought much prohibited goods, which I have ſeized ſo ſoon as we came near any Port of *England*, to prevent any other ſeizure; and then putting an information into the Exchequer, have ſuffered coſts againſt me, and all hath been clear. I gained not only much money by this means, but alſo the eſteem of a cunning ſubtile fellow, and was employed in many ſuch affairs, and ſometimes in Law-ſuits.

I remember once I came into Company with a very fair Lady, who having an old croſs-grain'd fellow to her Husband, had not only lived from him for ſome time, but was ſo fooliſh as to be married to another perſon, who was a Gentleman of much worth and merit. The Ladies old Husband (underſtanding thus

much and more out of Covetouſneſs of gaining money, which he believed the Gentleman would on this occaſion part from, then any love he bore his Wife) hunted them out from one place to another, and the young Gentleman reſuſing to comply with the old Knights deſires, he was reſolved now to proſecute her for Life.

This Story was told me by the Gentleman himſelf, and the Lady aſſured me of the truth of the matter, imploring my aſſiſtance: Well, Madam, ſaid I, come, be ruled by me, and I will diſappoint your old Husband, and you ſhall laugh at him. Having conſidered the matter, I ordered her to go next day into the Country, above 100 miles from *London*, and there to expect me, and obey my further orders, this ſhe did; and I ſoon following her, and the Aſſizes beginning the next day, I got a Warrant to apprehend and bring her before the bench, ſhe came, and I charged her with having two Husbands, ſhe denying, and I alledging the matter, ſhe was committed, and an Indictment brought in; but when ſhe was to be try'd, I was not to be found, nor any perſon elſe to proſecute her: ſo that ſhe was quit by proclamation. A Copy of this Proceſs I took out of the Court, and ſo ſhe and I came to *London*, to the Gentleman her friend, who gladly welcomed us, and now they live together in ſpight of the old Knight, who attempting to trouble them, found it in vain, for ſhe could not be tryed for one fact twice.

This feat did I, meerly out of my own apprehenſion and fancy, and it ſucceeding according to my wiſhes, and I had a conſiderable reward for my pains.

CHAP. XXIX.

The Drugſter ſets two Perſons, his wives Brothers-in-Law, at variance, he gets Money out of them both, proceeds in Trading, but adventuring too much, cannot pay his Debts, and is therefore clapt up in priſon.

I Drave this rambling Trade for a long time, and gained enough by it, but I was ſo prodigal in my expences (both at home and abroad, that I might be counted ſomebody) and ſometimes looſing conſiderable ſums at gaming, that I began to go behind hand, and oftentimes, when I pretended to go to *Graveſend*, the *Downs*, or other places to buy ſome Drugs, or other Merchandiſe aboard a Ship, I went not far from *London* to a brave handſome Laſs, that I kept for my private recreation. For though I had a wife, and ſhe indifferent handſome, yet was ſhe cold in her embraces, and ſtill talking of the cares of the World, and propounding ways to get Moneys. But my private Lady was quite different, being wholly compoſed of Love and ſweetneſs, profeſſing nothing more dear to her, then my Society: and we had

no other diſcourſe but pleaſure and enjoyments, in the greateſt height we could imagine; This though it were pleaſant, was very chargeable, to keep ſuch a Commodity for my own private uſe, ſo that I gained not much at the years end; and what I got over the Divels back, I ſpent under his belly, as the Proverb goes: Wherefore my wife called on me to ſtay at home and apply my ſelf to ſome ſettled way; but that I could not do, for my Stock was grown low and my ſpending as high as ever.

My Wife had a Father-in-Law who was a Citizen and a monyed man; him I got into favor with and by my free entertainment of him, won him to me; for he having left off trading in *London*, lived ſome miles off, and coming to *London* would often viſit me, where I ſtill welcomed him, and attended him abroad when he went to receive Rents, or any Moneys, and aſſiſted him in all ſuch things that I could, with much diligence. My ſtock being very low, I borrowed Moneys of him to trade with, and was very punctual in my payment, ſo that he put ſo much confidence in me, as to lend me 100 *l.* and more I might have had, had I requeſted it, as he and his wife (who was my wives Mother) often viſited me at my houſe, ſo at convenient times I was a gueſt at theirs in the Countrey? where I aſſociated my ſelf with the beſt Gentlemen of the place, winning upon the affections of all; by my facetious and pleaſant converſe. I had great hopes of raiſing my fortunes by my wives Mother, who I hoped would out-live her husband, and then,

at her death be able and willing to give me good part of her eſtate, but it fell out otherwiſe, for ſhe fell ſick and dyed before him, but it was my good luck to be there, and my wiſe being ſtill near her, ſhe gave her ſome Rings and other things that were conſiderable.

The old man my Father-in-Law being deſirous to bury his wife at *London* according to her requeſt went up with us, and being ſomewhat ſick before, ſo ſoon as his wiſe was buried, was ſo ſurprized with a diſtemper, that he took his bed, and after ten weeks ſicknefs dyed at my houſe, during his ſicknefs I bethought my ſelf of what advantage I might make it, and endeavoured to pleaſe him in all I might, but he having two ſons, I could not expect much of the eſtate, but was reſolved by hook or by crook to have a conſiderable ſhare, and to that end I knew no better way then to divide the two Brothers and put them at difference. The eldeſt was a married man, and though of an eaſie temper yet I knew was too honeſt to be wrought on to do any unhandſome action, the youngeſt being a young bluff fellow, was apt to believe any thing I ſhould perſwade him to, wherefore at firſt I poſſeſt him with a jealouſie againſt his brother, and that he would defraud him of his ſhare of the eſtate, if he did not take heed and follow my directions, which if he did, I would put him into a way to command his elder brother in every thing.

The young man being of a ſuſpitious nature,

eaſily believed me; and then I particularly advifed him, that the firſt thing he ought to do, was to get the Regiſter of his age altered; for if his father ſhould now dye, and he not truly being twenty years of age, could not expect to have the poſſeſſion of any part of the Eſtate, unleſs he were one and twenty. Wherefore to the houſe of the Pariſh Regiſter we went, and for the ſpending of one ſhilling, and five ſhillings in Money, we had the Regiſter book delivered to us, where I being well skilled in counterfeiting and imitating of hands; ſoon alter'd the Regiſter, putting his age out in one place, and writing it in another place two years before; ſo that the young man was now made half a year above full age. Then did we call the Regiſter, who gave us a Certificate out of the book of the young mans age, and this we carried with us as authentick, and to be produced on all occaſions. I having done thus much for the young Man, he could not deny me anything I deſired or requeſted: ſo that the old ſick Gentleman being ſtill weaker, and having his Money in a Trunk by his bedsſide, I perſwaded the younger Brother (who had the key) to take ſome out and lend to me; which he did: and that the old Man might not ſee the action; I and my wife would ſtand by the beds-ſide before him, ſo that by degrees I got 100 *l.* from thence; and when the old man dyed, though he left a conſiderable Eſtate. yet was there not a penny of ready Money. The elder brother knowing that he had foul-play ſhewed him, began to be angry, but to no purpoſe, for

he was forced to comply, the younger brother having poſſeſſion of that Trunck, and the keys of all others where all the Writings were. The old man being buried (and much exceſs and prodigality ſhewed in the expences and coſts thereof, which was done principally at my invitement, that I might gain repute by inviting as many friends as I pleaſed, and alſo drain my two young men of their moneys) the two brothers began to diſcourſe the matter, the elder brother demanding poſſeſſion of the Eſtate, and a divident to be made according to the Will of their Father; and, ſaid he, Brother, your ſhare muſt either be in my hands, or elſe in the Chamber of *London* till you come of age: How, ſaid I, till he come of age? Sure, you miſtake your ſelf, he is of ſufficient age already; and thereupon produced the Certificate, which though it was very punctual, yet the elder brother (who was neer ten years older then his brother) and ſeveral others who were preſent, knew to be falſe: and this was the firſt breach between them, which had like to have grown to a high flame: for the elder Brother applying himſelf to the Regiſter, upon ſearch of the Book, found the fallacy: and indeed the Regiſter acknowledged the fact; for which he, and the younger Brother, and my ſelf had like to have kiſſed *Newgate*, by order of the Lord Mayor, who being acquainted herewith, was highly incenſed againſt us all, profeſſing before the whole Court of Aldermen, That this act was of high concernment, and might be prejudicial to the

whole City. The elder brother was very cautious in profecuting this affair, being tender of his brothers credit, and therefore endeavoured by fair means to bring his brother to a handfome compliance; which he effected in my abfence, and fo wrought upon his Brother, that the Trunk of Writings was fent for to a Tavern, where they were for the prefent divided, and the Trunk with part of the Writings delivered to him, with a promife to put a fair end to the reft of the difference. When I came home, and found the Trunk gone, I ftormed exceedingly; and believing my felf difappointed of my purpofe, found out the younger Brother, and fchooled him fo foundly, that he by my directions went back to his brothers houfe, and by a falfe token regained the Trunk with the Writings which he had new fent home. Thus was their difference enlarged, and likely to be worfe; but the Elder brother fo moderately complyed with all mine and his brothers demands, though never fo unreafonable, that a divifion and partition was made, not onely of the Eftate, but fome part of the Goods, which being Plate, and Linnen, and Pewter, were delivered into my cuftody: and all the differences between the brothers being ended, I demanded of the elder brother fatisfaction for his fathers being at my houfe during the time of his ficknefs: he little expected this; for his father had given to me and mine an hundred pound, but that was nothing; I owed him fo much, and I muft have more, and fo I told him I would

have, or mifchief him: not giving any other reafon, but that he had enough, and I would have part. Thus did I hope to huff him out of his money: but he, though he was eafie and good-natured (which I accounted next of kin to a fool) yet wholly refufed me, affirming that I had no reafon for my demands, for I had an hundred pound given me, and that I had not been at any charge, for his father had continually given my wife money to provide all neceffaries, and that fome of that was ftill in my wives hands.

Though I knew what he alledged was true, yet I ftill perfifted in my demands, and told him, that fo much I would have for the trouble of my houfe: he offered to refer it to two men; I long refufed it, but at the length confented, and tampered with his Arbitrator, promifing him a reward, if he would anfwer my expectations: but he contrary to my expectations proved honeft, and gave me but half what I asked; neither would he have confented to that, but that the elder brother himfelf advifed him thereto, out of a defire of Peace. This Award I was much troubled at, and feeing I could get no more, was contented with what I could get of him: but the younger brother I fleec'd fomewhat more confiderably, getting out of them both, in Legacy, Mony and Goods, to the value of three or four hundred pounds: with which ftock of money, and a greater of credit, reporting of greater matters that were given me, I again fell to trafficking, and now dealt more confiderably

then ever: for I went to publick Sales, where great quantities of goods were ſold by inch of Candle, and bought thouſand pounds worth at a time; and ſo conſiderable was I lookt on, that I was often imployed by others to buy for them. I bought ſeveral parcels and ſorts of Goods, which I fetcht away as I paid for them: at laſt I bought ſeveral parcels of Goods to a great value, and fetcht away moſt of them, which I ſold to profit: but one parcel of 500*l.* being a failing and decaying Commodity, I left in their hands ſo long, that it was much damaged; and unwilling, and indeed unable to pay for them, was arreſted, and clapt up into priſon; where I was forc'd to lie a great while, till I had ſpent and conſumed moſt of what I had; and at length they finding there was nothing to be got by me, releaſed me, I releaſing my bargain: which I willingly did, but ſoon after repented it; for the price of that Commodity riſing, it ſoon amounted to great profit; and whereas I ſhould have loſt, I now might have gained, as they did by the ſale of it, neer 200*l.*

CHAP. XXX.

The Drugſter having failed in London, *goes to live in the Country; where by counterfeiting a ſickneſs, and making a Will, he gets into Credit, and borrowing Money falls again to Trading.*

THis Misfortune of my Impriſonment did ſenſibly afflict me; eſpecially, when I underſtood that inſtead of loſs, I might have gained by holding to my bargain; but it now being paſt, could not be helpt. I was reduced to ſuch neceſſity, that not onely all my Money, but my Plate and beſt Goods were ſold; and not onely my Wife, but my Whore parted from their Rings and Jewels to redeem me: for when I was in priſon, every body that I owed money to, though never ſo little, came upon me; and though I came off with my great Action eaſily enough, yet many other little ones ſtuck cloſe to me, which I was forced to diſcharge. I had now time enough to conſider my forepaſſed Actions, and to examine my ſelf what I had done to deſerve this affliction; I bethought me of the trick I firſt ſerved my Miſtreſſes Siſter, in cheating her of her Money and Virginity; but that ſtuck not much upon me, becauſe I thought her to be juſtly enough fitted for delaying me, diſtruſting me, and other bad practices I knew her guilty of; but when I conſidered the wrong

I had lately done the two brothers, in firſt raiſing a difference, and then continuing it between them, and not onely profecuting the elder brother ſo highly my ſelf, but putting another of my acquaintance (to whom I knew he was indebted) upon him to ſue and arreſt him, with all the diſgrace that I could, by cauſing it to be done on a Sunday as he went to Church, I my ſelf attending: This conſideration poſſeſſed me with an opinion that this Judgement was juſtly fallen upon me for this cauſe, I being rightly enough fitted, being likewiſe my ſelf arreſted on a Sunday, as I was going to Church: but now being diſcharged of my Impriſonment, I bethought me what courſe I was to take, and reſolved, that ſince I had ſuffered diſgrace in the City, it were beſt for me to remove into the Country, where I was not known; therefore I ſoon took a houſe of conſiderable value, and putting my ſelf in a very good Habit, and in equipage every ways ſuitable, I and my Wife, with moſt of my family removed from my *London* to my Country-houſe; I ſoon got my ſelf acquainted with the beſt and wealthieſt people of the place, and gave them very handſome treats and entertainments at my houſe, which they anſwered me with the like civility.

Though I had been a Priſoner, yet I had play'd my Cards ſo well in paying my ſmall debts, and told my tale ſo advantagiouſly about my great Action, that I had preſerved a ſufficient credit with ſome of my Dealers; ſo that making up about fifty pound out of my Wives

and Wenches Rings, Jewels, and ſome Plate, I was entruſted with 100*l.* worth of Commodities, with which I ſet up another Trade in the Country: this turned to good account: for I ſeldom ventured on any thing, but it was eſfectual and to purpoſe; and if I would wholly have bent my minde to get Money, I might have had a good eſtate; but I affected pleaſure equal to, and above profit; and though I was thus low in the World, yet I ſtill kept my Wench, whom I had now quartered in the mid-way between my *London* and Country-houſe, and therefore could lye with her commodiouſly enough, and tell my wife, if at my Country, that I lay at the *London* houſe; and ſo on the contrary.

As I thus enjoyed my pleaſure, ſo I now began to be more wary, and look aſter profit, which I did to good purpoſe; but I now wanted a Father-in-Law who was a moneyed man, or ſome other friend who would furniſh me with money; and if I could but have produced three or four hundred pounds in ready money, I queſtioned not but to make extraordinary advantage; for this end I thought on ſeveral ways, and at length did hit upon one that did my buſineſs. I travelling in the Winter, took an extraordinary cold that forced me to keep my bed for ſome days, and indeed I did ſo longer then I needed; for I counterfeited an extraordinary ſicknes, and that I was much troubled with the Stone and Collick; and ſo deſperate ill I pretended my ſelf to be, that my Wife lamenting, and my Children and Family being in much

diſorder, I was perſwaded to make my Will: to this I conſented; and the Scrivener of the Town was ſent for; I then told him, that by reaſon of my Childrens childhood, and my Wives incapacity to manage affairs, I was in a great ſtrait how to diſpoſe of my Eſtate, which though it was conſiderable enough, yet if it were not well managed, would ſoon come to nothing; I now being in a ſtrange Town, diſtant from *London*, where my acquaintance lived, I knew not well what perſon to intruſt as Executor, unleſs, ſaid I, Mr. *B.* of this Town would do me the kindneſs to take that trouble on him, which I would willingly requite by a ſufficient Legacy, and my Wife and Children would be bound to pray for him. Sir, ſaid the Scrivener, I queſtion not but he will do it; and if you pleaſe, I will not onely ask him, but perſwade him thereto. I thank you kindly, ſaid I, and for this offer of your friendſhip, I ſhall give you a Legacy as a Remembrance of me; and therefore, I pray, take notice of the heads of my Will, and then go with it to Maſter B. and ſhewing it to him, make this requeſt to him in my behalf: whereupon the Scrivener began, and I dictated to him, what, and to whom I would give; which was 1000 *l.* to my Wife, 300 a piece to my Children, and ſeveral other Legacies, amounting in all to near 3000 *l.* and 100 *l.* I gave to my intended Executor, and 10 *l.* to the Scrivener.

This affair being thus ordered, the Scrivener departed, and went to Maſter *B.* my intended Executor, who being a well-monyed man, and

withal very covetous, was very glad of the matter, and willingly accepted of the offer, and within few hours came to me, and told me he was very ſorry for my ſickneſs, and wiſhed my recovery; but if he could do me any ſervice living, or to my Wife and Children if I ſhould die, which he hoped would not happen, he ſhould be ready and willing both in purſe and perſon to aſſiſt me. I then told him what I had done as to my Will, and withal cauſed my Account-books to be produced, where I ſhewed and demonſtrated how my Eſtate ſtood, and in whoſe hands it was (having prepared falſe Accompts for that purpoſe:) he ſeeing the matter ſo plain, and hoping to get a fleece out of my Eſtate, cauſed the Scrivener to proceed and finiſh the Will, which I ſealed; but during his ſtay with me at that time, and ſome other times when he viſited me, I ſo counterfeited faintings and pain, that he and all others neer me, did fully conclude, I was no man for this World.

After I had managed this affair to the height, I ſoon recovered, and had now not only gained this old penny-father to be my friend, but by his and the Scriveners reports of my Eſtate, had many others, who more then ordinarily reſpected me, and made me tenders of their ſervice: all which I thankfully refuſed at preſent, as not having any need. Soon after this, I hearkned out a place, for which I was to give 1000 *l.* and it being a good penny-worth, I engaged in it: I made a ſhift to raiſe two hundred pound of my own moneys, and that was all I was then

able to do; but pretending I had of my own five hundred pound in money, I ſoon perſwaded my intended Executor to furniſh me with five hundred pound more; and ſo paying ſeven hundred pound to my Chapman, he took my word for three hundred pound more. This place put me in very great credit; and now, as well my *London* as my Country-acquaintance looked on me with reſpect, ſuppoſing all to be true that had been diſcourſed of me. I did not long keep this place, but ſold it for an 100 *l.* profit, and ſo became Maſter of more ready money then ever, with which I again came to *London*, wholly leaving my Country-houſe, and paying my Country Penny-father part of his moneys: and with that little of my own, and the reſt that was left, and what I had gained, I took a houſe and Shop in the place where I now live, and drive a Trade equal to the beſt of my Neighbours; onely I have had ſome dealings of late, which have a little puzzled me, as I lately told you, when I had my trial; but he that ſlander'd me paying ſo dear as 200 *l.* damages, will not onely himſelf beware, but alwaies teach others to hold their peace.

CHAP. XXXI.

The Drugſter now breaking in earneſt, endeavours to cheat his Creditors, and convey himſelf and Eſtate into Holland; *but is diſcovered, and his Eſtate ſeized, and himſelf ſtopt; but by aſſiſtance of the Relator, he gets off, and having a good ſum of Money, and the Scrivener and his Wench, all get away, and travel to the* Eaſt-Indies.

THus did the Drugſter finiſh his ſtory. I received ſatisfaction equal to whatever I had either in the Scrivener, Bookſeller, or any other Relation; for I found that his Actions had been different from theirs; for what they did under the cloak of honeſty, he did under that of Religion, which I found was too often the covering of *Knavery.* This Diſcourſe being ended, and our Wine out, we parted; proffering to each other all kinde of ſervice: and indeed it was through his occaſion, and to do him ſervice, that I am come to this place, ſo far from my Country; I ſhall therefore give you an account of his laſt Actions in *England*, which are as remarkable as any I have hitherto related to you; as alſo ſomewhat further of the Scrivener, who is our other Companion; and ſo finiſh this large Narrative, which I doubt hath almoſt wearied you.

I being unwilling to hinder the Traveller in proſecuting his Story, had with much pleaſure

attended and hearkned to what he had ſaid; and though his Diſcourſe was long, and had taken up much time, yet I found ſo much pleaſing variety, that made me ample ſatisfaction and amends; and being deſirous to know the reſt of their Adventures, and what fortune or misfortune had brought them hither, I deſired him to proceed, which he did in this manner:

I was now acquainted with three perſons, (*viz.* the Scrivener, Bookſeller, and Drugſter, an account of whoſe actions I have given you) that gave me full ſatisfaction, and put me into an abſolute opinion, that there was not onely *Knavery* uſed in all Trades and Profeſſions, but that moſt Trades were compoſed of, and moſt Eſtates gotten by over-reaching and *Knavery:* I therefore reſolved to look about me, and ſee what I could do in the world; and having an intimate and familiar acquaintance with the Scrivener, I was by him ſupplyed with what money I deſired, laying it out in Clothes, which I bought at the ſecond hand, and ſold again to my profit, and ſo repaying the Scrivener, who took no other intereſt then a Pint or a Quart of Wine. I did light upon ſo many good Bargains, that I had gained a ſtock of about fifty pound of my own, and my Maſter did not contradict or deny me in my dealing, becauſe I aſſiſted him in his profit, by bringing him Cuſtomers of our Club and acquaintance; I brought the Scrivener and Drugſter to be acquainted together, and they liked one another ſo well, that they contracted a friendſhip, which had hitherto laſted; and

the Scrivener was likewiſe aſſiſtant to the Drugſter in procuring him moneys at a pinch, which he honeſtly repaid him; and the Captain (which I told you the Scrivener firſt adventured to Sea withal, ſo much to their own profit, and the loſs of the Inſurers) was now a perſon admitted into our Society, and being now got up again in the world, became Maſter of a good Ship, and was often imployed by the Drugſter, and others of his acquaintance, on ſeveral ſhort Voyages to *Holland*, when at his return he was aſſiſted in ſecuring and conveying much prohibited and uncuſtomed Goods by the Drugſter, which was to the very great gain of them both; and in general we all thrived very well, till fortune, who is always changeable, in ſhort time turn'd tail upon the Drugſter, and had like to have cruſh'd him to nothing. He being at the height of his Trade, and ſtudying now onely how to be an Alderman, did drive a great Trade, buying and ſelling much Commodities, both Drugs and Grocery Ware, and indeed any other Merchandize whatever, nothing came amiſs to him, till at length he not onely had a great loſs at Sea, but buying a great quantity of Pot-aſhes, intending to make a great profit by keeping them up, he loſt 1000*l.* at a clap; for much of that Commodity coming in unexpectedly, he was forced to ſell his at great loſs: theſe two unlucky hits, both falling on the neck of one another, ſhrewdly ſqueezed him; but he being of a great courage, took little notice of it to the World, but ſtill run on all that he could,

adventuring a great part of the remainder of his Eſtate to Sea, which likewiſe failing, he was quite undone; but remembring that he had been in as bad condition, formerly, and ſtill made a ſhift to come off clear, and creep up again, his credit being ſtill high, he bought great quantities of Goods upon credit, to pay at three months; but not knowing how to beſtir himſelf, being now got very highly in Debt, and knowing very well that he could not make profit enough by thoſe Goods to ſet himſelf to rights, he thereupon bethought himſelf of conveying away what he had, and giving all his Creditors the ſlip: he had two other inducements that moved him thereto, the one was his Wives death, which was lately happened, and the other was his Wenches conſent and earneſt deſire for him to do ſo, promiſing him to aſſiſt him in all ſhe could, and alſo to accompany him in his Voyage.

This being agreed, the place intended for his Voyage being *Holland*, he ſold as much Goods in *London* at an under-rate for ready money, as he received 600*l.* for; and the reſt of his goods amounting to 1500*l.* worth, was put on board a Ship, which was immediately to ſet ſail for *Amſterdam*; his Lady being on board the Ship, but in a Diſguiſe, *Virago*-like, habited in mans apparel: he carried not his deſigne ſo cloſely, but ſome of his Creditors got knowledge of it, and underſtanding the buſineſs to be deſperate, took out a Statute of Bankrupt, and going on board the Ship ſeized on all; he being then at

London, taking leave of me, the Scrivener, and ſome other friends. This being done, the news came quickly to his knowledge; for before we parted, two of his Creditors, accompanied with Officers, not onely acquainted him with what they had done, but alſo ſecured his perſon. We were all ſurprized at this action, eſpecially the Drugſter, who now appeared more dead then alive; and though he was asked many Queſtions, yet he knew not readily how to anſwer one; and therefore they ſoon left us, carrying him away to one of their own houſes, where they tyrannically kept him for ſome days, not permitting any perſon to come at him; for though I attempted it, 'twas in vain. The Scrivener and I being together, wondred at the action, and could not tell what ſhould be the occaſion of this ſudden buſineſs; for the Drugſter had not acquainted us with the bottom of his deſigne, onely telling us, that he was to go a two Months Voyage to *Holland*, and ſo return. I then parted from the Scrivener, and attempted to ſee and to ſpeak with my friend the Drugſter, but it could not be at preſent; but by often importuning and pretending buſineſs of conſequence, in ten days time I was permitted to ſee and ſpeak with him; when having ſecured and examined the Chamber where he was, that none might over-hear our Diſcourſe, he ſoon acquainted me with every particular of his buſineſs and deſigne; nor did he relate to me that his Wench was on board in mans apparel, and how he had given 100*l.* in ſilver into her Cuſtody. But, ſaid

I, where is the other 500*l.* for in all I heard you ſay, you had 600*l.* in ready money? That ſaid he, I hope is ſafe, if my Clothes are ſo; and therefore, I pray, ſaid he, aſſiſt me a little in this affair, and enquire what is become of the Wench and my Clothes, and I doubt not but in few days to put all things right enough again. I not onely promiſed him to do my utmoſt, but went about it very faithfully; and going on board the Ship, found that all was gone; but upon enquiry, heard that the young man that was to accompany the Drugſter in the Voyage, was on ſhore at a houſe not far off: thither I went, and upon enquiry found out the party: I deſired private ſpeech with him, for ſhe went for a man; this was granted, and I diſcovering my ſelf ſo plainly to her in every particular, ſhe made no great difficulty to be as free with me, and told me, that all was gone, Clothes, and every thing elſe, except her own Box, where ſhe had ſecured the 100*l.* that was given to her; and, continued ſhe, My friend could not have employed any perſon to me, to whom I would have been ſo free as I ſhall be to you: for though you do not know me in this Habit, yet I ſuppoſe, had I my woman's dreſs, you would ſoon remember me: I then proteſted to her, that I could not call her Phiſnomy to minde. Well, ſaid ſhe, we have been more inward, and ere now lain together; and thereupon told me, that ſhe was one of thoſe three that I lay with in one night, and had redeemed from pawn, as I have formerly told you, at my laſt coming to *London.* Upon

this, though ſhe was in breeches; I made bold to kiſs her and embrace her: Well, ſaid ſhe, proceed no further, there may be time enough for the reſt; let us now conſult what is neceſſary to be done for our diſtreſſed friend; for, ſaid ſhe, if you and he deſire it, I ſhall be willing to part from all the hundred pounds, which I am yet Miſtreſs of. Well, replyed I, you are the moſt generous and deſerving Woman of all your Sex, eſpecially of your Quality, not onely for what you now offer, but what I formerly by experience, and lately by his Relations have underſtood of you. Truely, replyed ſhe, where I promiſe fidelity, I perform it; and where I finde worth, I will endeavour to deſerve and requite it: and though I have lived wantonly, yet ſince I was entertained by this Gentleman as his friend, I have been wholly conſtant, and will perſevere therein ſo long as he is able, or I can otherwiſe handſomely contrive a way to ſubſiſt. In this you are very obliging, ſaid I, but I hope you will not deny any old friend a courteſie. Well, ſaid ſhe, more of that hereafter. From this diſcourſe we fell to the matter in hand, conſulting and contriving what was moſt neceſſary to be done for our friends preſent accommodation: for the preſent, we agreed all the money ſhould lye in her hands, onely ſhe ſhould remove her quarters to the place appointed.

This being done, I again repaired to him, and acquainted him with my proceedings; he was glad I had found her and the hundred pound: but when I told him that the Cheſt with his

Clothes were gone and ſecured from him, he was almoſt out of his wits, cryed out that now he was miſerable, and never till now. Well, ſaid I, come, be contented, there may be a way found to remedy this evil. No, ſaid he, never till I am again Maſter of that Cheſt with my Clothes. Upon this he was ſilent, and ſoon after two of his chief Creditors entred the Chamber, and told him that if he would be ingenious with them, that they would not onely releaſe him, but put Money in his Pocket, that he might trade again: For, ſaid one of them, we have been at great coſt already for the taking out the Commiſſion of Banckrupt, and the Commiſſioners Fees for ſitting hath already coſt two hundred pound, and it every day runs up to more and more; So that in fine, it will conſume the Eſtate, unleſs you will aſſiſt us in making up your accounts; for there are ſeveral that we ſuppoſed had owed you money, do put in for to have a ſhare with us: and thereupon, they named two or three parties who had demanded monies of them. To this the Drugſter replyed, that he owed no ſuch ſums as were pretended, and that one of them owed him two hundred pound; he alledging this, and offering to prove it, they deſired him to provide againſt the next day to appear before the Commiſſioners; and if he did juſtifie this, they would immediately diſcharge him. This being agreed on, they left him, and he was now in ſomewhat better taking than he had been, and I encouraged him to bear up, and hope for the beſt. Well, ſaid he, if I can but get my Cheſt of Clothes a-

gain I care not; and I pray fail not to be with me to morrow, and get my Miſtreſs to ſend me ten pound, that I may have occaſion to uſe. We diſcourſed not much further for the preſent, but parted; and I returning home to my Maſters, asked leave to be abſent for that night; to which he conſented; and indeed, I had ſo much liberty, that I might ſtay out ſo long as I pleaſed, my Maſter uſing me rather like a Companion then a Servant.

I now went to the Drugſters Lady, and my *quondam*-acquaintance, and informing her of my buſineſs, ſhe freely delivered me ten pound: But, ſaid I, this is not all, I muſt have ſomewhat elſe before I go; and thereupon called for Wine, and we drank ſo briskly, that we were both pretty merry: And it being now late, ſhe asked me where I intended to lodge: I ſaid, with her; That muſt not be, replyed ſhe: and indeed I had ſomewhat to do to perſwade her to it; but at length I did, and we lay together without any ſuſpition, ſhe going for a man. We often interchanged many amorous imbraces, and performed all thoſe dalliances that two longing Lovers could expect, and made many proteſtations of a farther friendſhip: I telling her, that I believed her friend the Drugſter would not be offended, if he knew of our enjoyments, and would as well impart her to me, as he had done his chiefeſt ſecrets: Well, ſaid ſhe, if you gain his conſent, you command mine, and I therefore leave it to your management; and I ſuppoſe if you tell him of our former acquaintance, the greateſt difficulty will be over-

come. This I thought would be a ready way, as indeed it was: and ſince then we have had an equal enjoyment of her; ſhe having lain with one of us every night ſince, and during our Voyage hither, and is one of thoſe two are in mens apparel, and is called *George*.

But, ſaid I, to return to my matter in hand, I the next morning parted from her, and with ten pound in my pocket, went to my friend, who was going before the Commiſſioners, whither I attended him; and there he carried himſelf with ſo much freedom and ingenuity, that he was ſet at liberty, and promiſed more favours: he then made it his requeſt, that he might have the Cheſt with his Clothes: to this ſome conſented, but others replied, all muſt be appriſed, and till then nothing could be diſpoſed of, and therefore they demanded the key of him: this he refuſed; but they told him, that then they would break it open: he ſeeing there was no other remedy, promiſed to bring it the next morning, and then deſired they might be appriſed, and delivered to him: and thus they parted; and after he and I had drunk a Pint of Wine, we alſo parted.

As I was going home I met with the Scrivener, who being deſirous to know how matters went with the Drugſter, would enforce a glaſs of Wine on me; when I told him all the matter, and omitting nothing, we judged that his five hundred pound was in that Cheſt with his Clothes, and that now he would be ſtripp'd of it. But, ſaid the Scrivener, I wiſh he were Maſter of that Money, and then I ſhould propound a way to him

to leave them, by making him partner in a deſign which I have lately projected, and is now neer execution.

I needed not uſe many words to perwſade him to acquaint me with his deſign, wherefore after few words, he opened to me the matter thus:

I have, ſaid he, lived in ſo full an enjoyment of every thing here, that I am weary of it, being tied to one place; and my ſpirit being of a ſoaring rambling temper, am deſirous of novelty and change; and to that end I have ſome time ſince purpoſed, and lately contrived a way to leave *England* for ſome other place, and conſulting with the Captain whom you know, have reſolved for the *Eaſt-Indies*, whither he is now bound: and that I might not go away beggerly, (for I never intend to return, unleſs very rich) I have contrived a way how to carry good ſtore of money with me, which I am now plentifully provided with. Yes, ſaid I, I know it is no difficulty for you to procure what money you will, having the keeping of ſo much Caſh. You are miſtaken, ſaid he, I intend not to wrong my Maſter of a penny, but have done it otherwiſe, the manner thus:

My Maſter hath lately taken a Journey into the Country, and left the ſole management of his affairs to me; and reſolving now to make uſe of my time, I have put my Project in Execution. I have been with one of our Money-Maſters, and told him, that ſuch a man, whom he knew to be a good man, that is, a rich man, wanted ſo much Money; this he readily conſented to, and I had

the Money delivered to me, only giving him a Bond, whereto I have counterfeited the name of him whom I told him was the Borrower, and my ſelf, with one more was a witneſs: this have I done with two or three, who I was confident would truſt me; and with two I have pretended they would borrow of one another two hundred pound apiece, and given each of them a Counterfeit bond; and I cannot chuſe but ſmile, to think in what a caſe they will both be when the time of payment comes, and inſtead of receiving, they will demand two hundred pounds of each other: it may be, they will be ſo frolick as to go to law; if they do, it will make good ſport for the Lawyers. By this means, as I tell you, I have raiſed fifteen hundred pounds, which I have all ready by me in good Jocobuſſes, and am ready in ten days to march off with my Captain for the *Eaſt-Indies*; now if the Drugſter had his Money in readineſs, I ſhould be glad of ſo good Company. I heard him with much delight, and from that very minute reſolved to make one of the Company, and then offered him my ſervice, which he kindly accepted of, and promiſed me that I ſhould ſhare all fortunes with him.

I went back to my Miſtreſs, and provided my ſelf for my Voyage: and the next day the Drugſter bringing his Keys, the Cheſt where his Clothes were was opened, and all in it was examined, but no Money found: I remember at every parcel of Clothes they took, his eye was ſo fixed, that I thought he would never remove it; but at length all was paſs'd over, and the Clothes prized at

twenty pounds: he earneſtly entreated that he might have them; but they replied, they could not do it without the conſent of all, unleſs they gave ſo much out of their own pockets, and they had already loſt too much by him. He finding that there was no way but one, took me with him to a Tavern, and conjured me to do him one kindneſs, which was, by all means to purchaſe theſe Clothes at any rate; giving me the ten pound I had brought him, and five pound more, he knew not at preſent what to do for five or ten pounds more, which he adviſed me to give for the Clothes rather than fail. It was too far to go to his Ladies Quarters, wherefore I out of my own ſtock ſupplied that want; and then going to the Creditors, with much ado perſwaded one of them, who had the Keys, to ſell me the Clothes: he would not conſent to do this, unleſs I would give him thirty pound, which was ten pound more then they were apprized at: though the demand was unreaſonable, yet I was forced to conſent; and putting ten pound of the money into his own pockets, willingly delivered the Clothes to me, charging me not to diſcover what I gave. I did not much heed what he ſaid, but gladly received the Cheſt and key, and carried it to the Drugſter, who with much impatience expected me; it being carried up into a private Chamber, and the door faſt locked, he unlocked the Cheſt, and took out the Clothes, and drawing his Knife, unript the Collar of a Doublet, where were ſeveral pieces of Gold: Nay then, ſaid he, we are ſtill ſafe, and I defie Fortune and all her malice: in

leſs then half an hour, with my aſſiſtance, we found out 500 *l.* in Gold, which was ſewed up in ſeveral places about the Clothes. This being done, I ſoon acquainted him with the Scriveners Project, and my reſolution: to this he likewiſe conſented, only, ſaid he, I muſt not leave my honeſt Girl behind me. For that, ſaid I, I queſtion not but I ſhall have ſome influence to perſwade her; and thereupon I acquainted him with my former knowledge of her: Well, ſaid he, ſince it is ſo, we will continue her a friend to us both, and not entertain any jealouſie. In fine, we agreed not only in that particular, but in every thing elſe; and the Scrivener being acquainted with all our deſigns, we ſo ordered the matter, that I, the Drugſter, and our Miſtreſs, and the Scrivener and a Wench of his, whom he had likewiſe put into mans Apparel, did all come on board with all our Treaſure into our Captains Ship which was in the *Downs*, and bound for this place; and ſo having good Winds, good Company, and every thing to our content, are all ſafely arrived in this place.

CHAP. XXXII.

He being now by the Relator brought acquainted with the Scrivener, Drugſter, and the reſt of his Companions; they enter into diſcourſe about the ſeveral Factious Religions practiſed in England.

THus did our Relator finiſh his long ſtory, which was ſo filled with profit, as well as pleaſure, that I accounted the time I had ſpent in hearing him the beſt beſtowed of any: for I gathered ſo much variety of experiences, that if I had any minde to proſecute my former courſe of life in cheating and Roguing, I might now ſoon profeſs my ſelf to be my Arts-Maſter, if I did but bravely follow thoſe Examples he had related to me: but if they were any wiſe improved, as I had a Genius fit enough to be highly active, I might then out-do all Example.

Theſe were my firſt thoughts, but I had not much time to ſpend in contemplation: but he having put an end to his diſcourſe, I kindly thanked him for his great freedom uſed in his relation; and told him, that ſince he had been ſo generous to me in unboſoming himſelf, I in requital did promiſe him a laſting friendſhip, and at our firſt leaſure recount ſome of my life to him, which I had hitherto concealed, that ſhould give him ſatisfaction that I intended to uſe an abſolute freedom with him.

Thus did we contract a friendſhip, and it was now time to eat ſomewhat, the beſt part of the day having been ſpent in his long narrative: ſuch as the houſe afforded we had, and after a repaſt, we concluded both to go on board of their Ship to finde out his Companions; he reſolving to acquaint them with what had paſſed between us, and to let them know my quality, believing they would be well enough ſatisfied with what he had done, becauſe they might have great occaſion to make uſe of me.

In this reſolution we were preparing to go to the Ship, when the Scrivener and Drugſter entred the houſe, enquiring for their Companion, who preſenting himſelf to them, they deſired him to walk out, that they might conſer together: No, ſaid he, let us take a Room here and diſcourſe, which we may do with as much freedom as any where elſe: he urging it, they conſented, and having a private Room and neceſſaries, after a cup or two of Wine I left their company, on purpoſe to give my friend the *Taylor* (who was called *Gregory*) the opportunity of acquainting them with what had paſſed between us, which I ſuppoſe he did in very few words; for within half an hour I was called for, and being kindly ſaluted by the two Gentlemen, was deſired to ſit down and make one of their Company. After a Cup or two of Wine more had paſſed, my friend *Gregory Taylor* thus ſpake to me: Friend, I have acquainted theſe my two Friends and Companions with our late diſcourſe, and by that they know that all their affairs are known to you alſo;

I have told them what I know of you, & we are all ſenſible that your acquaintance may be very uſeful and neceſſary in all things, but much more your friendſhip: Wherefore, as you ſay I by my freedom with you have merited your acquaintance and friendſhip; ſo I deſire the ſame room in your breſt for my Friends, who by me deſire it, and in requital you ſhall command ours; and whatever we have, you ſhall be equally Maſter of with our ſelves.

I made no long pauſe in replying to them, that they might command my love and friendſhip, and in that my all, to render them the utmoſt teſtimonies that I could. And thus did we all agree to have a friendly correſpondence, and to conceal nothing of our affairs one from another. We then drank off ſome more Wine; and though their two Ladies and the Captain were abſent, yet we remembred them in our Cups, and reſolved the next day to dine all on board the Ship: and at my importunity I ſo far prevailed, as that the Women might appear there in their own Female-Habits; for it had now been a long time ſince I ſaw any *European* beauties.

We after this diſcourſed of many affairs of general conſequence, as the manner of the Countries, and Governments both Eccleſiaſtical and Civil, in which we ſpent ſome time: but in regard all that can be ſaid of that matter, is already related in the ſecond Chapter of this ſecond part; I ſhall therefore here forbear it: but it wrought much upon the ſpirit of the Drugſter; who having formerly been a great ſtickler in Religion, was

amazed that there was ſo good a correſpondence in Religion, which was as he imagined ſo barbarous: Well, ſaid he, I finde that moſt places enjoy a greater happineſs in their conformities in Religion, then our Native Country of *England;* for there, inſtead of Unity and loving Conformity, they are rent and torn in peeces into many Factions; and that hath been the principal occaſion of the effuſion of ſo much blood as hath been ſpilt of late years; and when I left *England*, there was ſtill a diſcontented party that was ready on all occaſions to attempt a publique miſchief for their private intereſt, and onely to maintain a private ſelf-will'd-fancy, which they term'd Religion.

I my ſelf was for a long time bewitcht with a Fanatick Zeal; and my Maſter being a man of the ſame Humour, had inſtill'd ſuch Principles into me, that I had much ado to have any charity for any perſon that was in the right: but in time I finding a great deal of ſtrictneſs in the preciſe practice, and that under pretence of much Zeal, there was more Covetouſneſs then in any other perſwaſion; I quitted that perſwaſion for another, and ſhifted ſo long, that I found my life but one continued Comedy of errors. In the end I went over to the Epiſcopal party, & one of the moſt powerful reaſons that I had to follow the Independant perſwaſion, was a Woman, my Miſtreſſes Siſter, as I ſuppoſe you have already heard. Yes, ſaid I, this our friend hath given me ſatisfaction in that particular, and I very well approve of the revenge you had upon her: and as for my

own part, I was once a very great Lover of the Ramble my ſelf, but left it, out of a more generous conſideration: for being in company with an Orthodox Parſon, he told me that I was much miſtaken in my opinions; he gave me ſuch a Character of a Libertine Zealot, as I knew to be true, and wholly put me out of conceit with the Faction: they were now all deſirous to hear what was ſaid to that particular; and therefore I told them I would recollect my ſelf, and give them the beſt account that I could, and ſuch a one as I believed they would conclude with me, was not onely ingenious, but true: and thereupon I began in this manner.

The Character of a Libertine Zealot.

TO deſcribe him right, is a task like that of the Taylor who took meaſure of the Devil; for there is nothing more like him upon Earth then he: He is lined with Covetouſneſs, and covered with Hypocriſie, the Root and Cloak of all evil. Although at this time he carries a Bible, yet upon occaſion he wears a Sword; ſo that it is hard to ſay, whether he be of the Tribe of *Simeon* or *Levi*. He ſwallows contrary Oaths faſter then the Eagles in the Tower do gobbets of fleſh; for the way to Hell, and the Conſcience of a Libertine, are two broad things. He condemns the lawful Rites and Ceremonies of the Church; and is more raviſhed with the ſqueaking of a Tythe-pig, then with the Muſick of Organs.

He appears at his Preachment (like *Æſops* Crow) in a dreſs of borrowed feathers; for he preaches the works of other men, which are ſo much the worſe for the coming out of his mouth, as Wares for being of the ſecond hand. But it would grieve your heart to ſee how he racks the ancient Fathers, when he makes his own confeſſion, and mangles the Modern Divines more barbarouſly then the Hang-man did the body of *Hugh Peters*;

I am ſure poor *Priſcian* gets many a broken head.

His Eloquence conſiſts altogether in rayling, as though he had got his education at *Billinſgate*. In his diſcourſe he runs on like a Mad-dog, foaming and open-mouth'd, yelping at the Reverend Biſhops; and even accounts many of his own Brethren, the Sectaries, as mad as himſelf. Yet ſometimes he perceives that his ſtuff is too ſhort for the hour-Glaſs; and then the wheels of his Rhetorick move very heavily: he then ſpends much time in humming and ſpitting; and with the wiping of his Noſe, makes many a filthy Parentheſis.

As for his Text, he handles that as *Moſes* did his Rod when it was turned into a Serpent, he lays it down, and runs away from it: yet his Sermon lies all written before him; for the poor Copy-holder in Divinity can do nothing without his Notes. This his weakneſs, he would have you think, is his worth; for he chargeth men of abler parts with preſumption: Yet when he prays, he ſhuts his Eyes, preferring Nonſenſe and Tautologies before the Divine Lyturgy. *Vain Wretch, that dares not ſpeak to men without Papers, and yet preſumes to talk to God* extempore! As for his Congregation, he Saints or reprobates them, according to what they give him; and like a Gypſie, tells good Fortune to none but thoſe that croſs his hand with a piece of ſilver; and by him, as well as by the Pope, you may be Canonized for mony: Thus he is a meer *Balaam*, that bleſſeth and curſeth for reward: he

that oppoſeth him, acts the part of an Angel; but he that ſubmits to him is worſe then an Aſs. If you conſider his conſtancy, he is a kind of *Religious Proteus*, that is now ready to fawn upon that Power againſt which he hath ſo long bark'd. If therefore there be a Church in *England* which conſiſts of men, ſurely, *The Orthodox, faithful, conſtant Miniſters, are the Doors, Windows, Pillars, Bells and Candleſticks;* and the reſt ſerve only for *Weathercocks.*

It is confeſſed, that at the beginning of this happy Reformation, he was a little ſtubborn: perhaps, expecting a ſecond War; but now (poor heart) he hath learned to pray for his Majeſty: but (if you could hear the language of his Soul) it is ſo, as impatient heirs pray for their rich fathers. There are two ſorts of men, who having eſcaped a deſerved pair of Gallows, pray for the King very ſtrangely, that is, a Felon, whilſt the Executioner burns his hand; and a Traytor, whilſt the Devil fears his Conſcience.

If you would know his name, you may finde it ſubſcrib'd to an ugly Petition; for where *Bradſhaw* was a *Pilate* that condemned, he was one of thoſe Jews that cry'd Crucifie. He profeſſes ſorrow for the Martyrdom of our late Soveraign; but believe him not, for his hand helped to hale him to the Block. In a word, he is (at beſt) but a State-Crocodile, and one that is Maudlin-drunk with the Kings blood.

No more, but if you chance to meet with a Hue and Cry, you may tell them, that he was lately in a Sequeſtred Parſonage.

This Character was hugely pleaſing to the Drugſter; and indeed, he and his two Companions, the Scrivener, and *Gregory* the Taylor, did all conclude, that it was very ingeniouſly true, and gave much ſatisfaction to them in that particular; and they all agreed, *That the Diſſenters from the Church, were the Murtherers of their Prince.*

They all ſo well approving of what had been ſaid of theſe Varlets, I told them that I could likewiſe relate ſomewhat elſe of the ſame Gentlemans compoſure, who writ that *Character*; and which I did conclude to be altogether as ingenious, and that it was a great novelty, having never as yet been in Print: they being earneſt in their deſires to hear me, I told them it was only the fifth Fable of *Æſop* Moralized; and thereupon I began as follows:

The Brutes would once go hunt: a nimble Crew
Of thoſe that dwell in Dens and Caves purſue
And take a goodly Stag, who in his fall
Proclaims ſufficient booties unto all.
Each Beaſt being troubled with their hungry maws,
Were urging Clyents to their panting Jaws:
Divide, ſays one; another cries, Caſt lots;
With that, the Lyon Roars, Away ye Scots:
Who's that who ſays divide? pray be content,
The firſt part's mine, becauſe moſt excellent;
And but one part! nay, then you do me wrong,
A ſecond part is mine, becauſe moſt ſtrong;
And if you dare give credit to my word,
Our pain and ſweat have merited a third.

Now there remains a fourth, which is but ſmall,
And ſcarce worth ſpeaking of amongſt you all;
Which you may give me willingly; and thus,
Renew the friendſhip betwixt you and us.
Be wiſe therefore; is it more ſafe to move
A Lyons anger, or confirm his love?
For if you ſhew the leaſt unwillingneſs,
I'll make you know the Senior of your Meſs.
This ſaid, the Hunters were amaz'd thereat;
They knew their diſtance, and they durſt not prate,
But hung their tails betwixt their legs for ſhame,
And went away more hungry then they came.

This, ſaid I, was the Fable, which though it had already admitted of many Paraphraſes and Morals, yet was never yet in my opinion ſo fit and aptly moralized, as in what I ſhall here recite, which I did thus:

But take away the Brutes, and clear the Stage;
Enter thoſe mighty Nimrods of the Age:
That curſed Crew that hunted for a Throne,
And made a Babel in Religion.
Lo here they come, that England *did expreſs*
To be more brutiſh than a Wilderneſs:
A Wide-mouth'd-yelping-cur, with a long ear,
Of a Scotch brood, they call'd him ——*:*
Cerberus was his Syre, and for his dam
A Beaſt to whom Adam *never gave name.*
The ſolemn Covenant which he did take,
Hung like a pair of Couples on his neck:
The which he ſoon ſhook off; nay more, the Dog
Threw by his conſcience, 't was a tedious Clog.

And then began the game: Actæons *hounds*
Ne'er gave their Master half so many wounds,
As these their King: it was a hellish brood
That took the sent of none but Royal blood.
Loud was their Cry, and nimble was their Race;
A sadder hunting far than Chevy Chase.
But at the length, the Royal Hart they take,
Nor would they spare his life for Cæsars *sake;*
But he must dye, yet Noble —— scorns
His share, —— onely got the Horns.
But like the Lyon, Cromwel, *that great man,*
Made of Behemoth *and* Leviathan,
Thus speaks; And do you think, my friends, to share
That Prize in Peace, which I obtain'd in War?
Divide the spoil, and then as General I
Claim the first part due for my Excellency.
A second part our able strength demands;
A third is mine, 'cause these victorious hands
In all those fights wherein we had to do,
Were the most painful and most prosperous too.
Thus our activity, and strength, and worth,
Have won three parts, there onely rests a fourth;
Which we'll with love accept, but if deny'd,
Our sword shall teach you better to divide.
Thus, as our Saviours Vesture, which might not
Be cut in pieces, was obtain'd by lot:
So our great Charles *his power, which could not be*
Dissolv'd into an Aristocracie,
Was Tyrant Cromwels *share; and now our whips*
Were turn'd to Scorpions: Now the grand Eclipse
Began; we saw no Sun for twice seven years,
Onely two fatal Stars by turns appears:
Protectorship, and Rumpship did prevail:

Nol *was the Dragons head, and they the tail.*
But welcome Charles *the Second, happy are we,*
That Britain's *Monarchy's restor'd in thee;*
If Cromwels *life had put a period to't,*
It'd both begun and ended in a Brute.

If they were pleas'd with the foregoing Characters, this Fable thus moralized gave them much more satisfaction, and highly contented them; for the truth contained in it, was undeniable, and it was expressed with much ingenuity, and they told me that certainly he that composed these two things, the Character and Fable, was a person very ingenious, and able to convert any that were seduced in that Faction, unless they were very obstinate, as most of that Faction were: for having been Rebellious to their Prince, they made that saying true, *That Rebellion is as the sin of Witchcraft, not to be repented of.*

In this discourse of the several Factions in Religion we spent some time; and the Drugster being best acquainted with all of them, made a discourse of every one in particular from top to bottom: and when he came to speak of them, he told us that he supposed there would now in a short time be some end of these growing Factions; Because, said he, that Quakerism is the last that is risen up, and it is now above twelve years since it began to be famous; and though hitherto it encreases, yet they have not found any other novelty from that, as at first there

was out of the firſt Religious faction: but there is none that is produced by the Quaker; ſo that it is hoped that will be the laſt of the Factions. I have heard of one ſmall Faction that contradicts the Quakers, and that is one *Muggeltons* Sect, who together with one *Reeve*, does pretend to be the two laſt Witneſſes that are to come upon earth. *Reeve* is ſome time ſince dead, but *Muggleton* ſurviving him, is a great enemy to the Quakers, and their chief Opponent; for they queſtioning his Call, he for that cauſe Damns them; and ſo abſolute he is, that he ſays, after he hath damn'd them, they cannot be ſaved, not by Providence it ſelf. He profeſſes in one of his writings, being an Interpretation of the 11 Chapter of the *Revelations*, That he, and he alone can give a true Interpretation of the Scripture, and unfold the whole Counſel of God, concerning himſelf, the Devil, and all Mankind from the foundation of the world to all Eternity; and this was never revealed by any of the ſons of men, untill now: Thus ſubſcribing his Papers, By *Lodowick Muggleton*, one of the two laſt Commiſſionated Witneſſes and Prophets of the only High, Immortal, Glorious God, *Chriſt Jeſus*.

We told the Drugſter that this Sect of *Muggletons* we had not heard of; and I being very deſirous to be further acquainted with this opinion, asked him if he had read his Writings, Yes, ſaid he, and there is as extraordinary matters and opinions handled and treated of therein, as any Sect that this laſt age hath produced: nay,

and more abſolute he would make himſelf then all others; but he more eſpecially writes againſt the Quakers, in a manner condemning them all in general. I deſiring to be more particularly informed of his writings, he granted my requeſt, and proceeded as followeth:

This Book of his writing, ſaid he, falling into the hands of one *Edward Bourn* a Quaker, is by him deſpiſed and cavilled at; for, he ſaid that he had peruſed it till he was weary with looking into it, for it was one of the dirtieſt and confuſedſt pieces of work that ever he ſaw: and many other particular cavils had he againſt it; which *Muggleton* hearing of, is ſo much offended, that he writes a Letter to him, dated in *Auguſt* 1662. and there he thus concludes: *I write theſe Lines unto you* Edward Bourn, *knowing you to be of the ſeed of the Serpent, and appointed to eternal Damnation before you were born; though you know it not, I do know it, by your ſpeaking evil of that Doctrine which is declared by us the Witneſſes of the Spirit, by calling it deceit, confuſion, and lies, with many more wicked ſpeeches againſt the pureſt truth that ever was declared by Prophet or Apoſtle, becauſe this is the Commiſſion of the Spirit, and the laſt Witneſs of God on Earth.*

Therefore, for theſe your hard ſayings againſt the Doctrine of this Commiſſion of the Spirit; In obedience unto my Commiſſion, I pronounce you curſed and damned, both Soul and Body, from the preſence of God, elect men and Angels, to Eternity; neither ſhall that light within you, nor any God deliver you from this curſe, but according to my

word it ſhall be upon you, becauſe you ſhall know, that God hath given power unto Man to curſe you to eternity, and that there is a Prophet of the Lord now in England.

This Letter being thus ſubſcribed, was printed and ſent to the ſaid *Edward Bourn.* Alſo another to one *Samuel Hooker* and *W. S.* both Quakers, wherein amongſt other things he thus writes:

Firſt, I declare as I am a Prophet and Meſſenger of the true God, that the people called Quakers are not the children of the moſt high God, but for the generality of them, they are children of the Devil, and are the very Seed of the Devil, and were begotten by him; and I (as I am an Ambaſſador ordained of God by voyce of Words) can as truely ſay; that they are the Seed of the Serpent, and ſo the children of the Devil, as Chriſt did to the Jews, when he ſaid, that they were Serpents, *yea* Devils, *and the* Devil was their father. *So can I ſay by you Quakers, and many thouſands more as well as you, that you were the children of the Devil, that were begotten by him, and not begotten by* Adam, *who never came through the loyns of* Adam, *though they came through the womb of* Eve. *For this I know,* Cain *was the firſt-born of the Devil, and* Adam *had no part in the begetting of him. And from this* Cain *came the Jews that Chriſt called* Serpents *and* Devils.

Much more he writes againſt the Quakers, and is as abſolute in his ſentence of Damnation againſt theſe two, being almoſt in the ſame words as the former. His writings in general are filled

with many ſtrange Opinions, and he is now the greateſt Enemy of the Quakers, telling them, that they are but ſome of the melancholy ſort of Ranters, and by falling from Ranting to Quaking, are now worſe then before; for before they were in the Wilderneſs, but are now returned back into *Egypt*, and ſo the further off from entring into the Land of *Canaan*: and in one place he is pretty pleaſant with the Quakers, for ſaith he, The greateſt things that ever I heard the Quakers do, is to find fault with a piece of Ribbon, Gold-button, or a Bandſtring, and ſuch like, and to poſſeſs themſelves with a melancholly ſpirit of Witchcraft, and ſo fall into Witchcraft-fits, to lie humming and groaning, which doth fright the beholders; ſo inſtead of thoſe merry-Devils which they had upon the Ranting-ſcore, where all was good, lying with their Neighbours wife, deflowring Virgins, cozening and cheating, and deſtroying every one in their outward Eſtate which did entertain them, and now that Devil is caſt out, now they are grown in as much extream on the other ſide; for now they are grown ſo preciſe and exact for Apparel and for words, no words muſt be placed out of joynt, ſo that no man can almoſt tell how to deal with them; and this melancholly Devil hath caſt out the Ranting Devil, which makes them ſo proud and ſtiff-necked, thinking themſelves that they are better then other people, when as they are worſe; for they are poſſeſſed with the Spirit of Witchcraft, which makes them two-fold more the children of the

Devil then they were before; which none can discover but this Commission of the Spirit; neither did I ever hear by any which heard the Quakers speak, that they did ever preach any sound Doctrine, but only exhort people to hearken to the light within them, which is a very low & easie thing for every ordinary understanding to comprehend; and this is the cause there is such a multitude of men and women fall into it, *&c.* And thus did he proceed, his whole writing being to pull them down, and set himself up.

Soon after the Printing of these Letters, I met with a Quaker, an acquaintance of mine, and asked of him whether he had seen these Letters of *Muggletons*, which went by the name of *The Neck of the Quakers broken, or cut in sunder by the two-edg'd sword of the Spirit, which is put into my mouth.* He reply'd, Yea he had. What thinkest thou, said I, of those of your perswasion in general, and more particularly of those persons whom he hath damn'd? I think him to be a deluded person, said he, for I have known him long, and also his fellow Prophet *Reeve*, who is since dead: and I remember this one passage, that one of our perswasion did calmly discourse with *Reeve* about many principal things of his Judgement and Opinion: and though they did not agree to every thing, yet *Reeve* said he believed he would be converted, for that he was confident he was of the seed of Faith, and not of that of the Devil; onely that his eyes were not yet opened, but in time they would. And thus they parted.

Soon after *Muggleton* (who was always more vigilant than *Reeve*) being affronted by ſome Quakers, according to his cuſtom pronounced the ſentence of damnation againſt them; which the Quakers who had diſcourſed with *Reeve* hearing, and meeting with *Muggleton*, told him he had done very ill, in being ſo raſh as to damn them: And further, charged him with wandring up and down to make Sects. To this *Muggleton* replyed; It is not I, it is thoſe of the Quakers that wander up and down; as thoſe that went to *New England*, and *John Perrot* unto *Rome*, to get the Pope and his Biſhops to be Diſciples of Chriſt; and there to be puniſhed in his body: and when he came home again, to be damn'd to eternity, by me, for his pains; becauſe he went by the light within him, and was not ſent by the voice of God without him: Therefore eternal damnation will be his reward for going without a Commiſſion from God; and ſo will all the Miniſters of the Quakers. And whereas you ſay that my mouth is full of curſing, and that I ſhall reap of the ſame; likewiſe you ſay, that I am out of *Chriſts* and the Apoſtles Doctrine, that ſaid, *bleſs and curſe not*, with many other ſayings: As for my mouth being full of curſing, that is my Commiſſion: neither do I curſe any but Devils, which are appointed for it of God; and there is never a one that I have curſed, that ſhall eſcape that curſe which I have denounced upon them; neither will any God deliver them from it: for I do curſe none but the Seed of the Serpent, who had his curſe denounced upon him

and his Seed, at the beginning by God himſelf.

To this diſcourſe of *Muggletons*, our Brother the Quaker making ſome angry reply, in contradicting what he had ſaid, *Muggleton* did for that cauſe preſently pronounce the ſentence of Damnation, alledging that he was of the Seed of the Devil. Thus, ſaid the *Quaker*, though *Reeve* ſaid he was not of the Seed of the Devil; yet *Muggleton*, his fellow-Prophet, ſaid he was, and therefore proceeded againſt him to damnation. Now whether he be damned or ſaved, judge you: And therefore, ſaid he, I think it matters not much what he ſays, becauſe they thus contradict one another.

And thus we parted, and I concluded, that as it was no great matter what *Muggleton* ſaid or did; ſo there was no great heed to be taken with what was, or ſhould be ſaid or done by the *Quakers:* I believing and knowing that what *Muggleton* had ſaid of them as to their humours, and falling from *Ranting* to *Quaking*, and ſuch like particulars, to be true; though I believed him, and all other Factions to be alike deluded and miſtaken in the general.

And, continued he, though this *Muggletons* opinions and Doctrine be thus ſtrange, and he a very inconſiderable unlearned fellow, being by Profeſſion a Taylor; yet he hath gained many to his belief, who give him much reſpect; but he takes no money of them, onely he gets his writings printed, and diſtributing them among his people, they pay him for them: but in the main, he works at his Trade for a lively-hood: and he

hath, as well as the *Quakers*, ſuffered Impriſonment, but hath been releaſed and favoured, as I have heard, by ſome perſons of Honour, who are well-willers to him.

Thus did the Drugſter diſcourſe of the Factions, and we with him did hope and conclude, that ſince there was no greater a growth in faction, there having been no new ones for ſome years laſt paſt, that it was more then probable that they would conſume and moulder away of themſelves.

The forenoon being ſpent wholly in the large Narrative of the Adventures of my now ſellow-Companions and Gueſts, and the moſt of the afternoon in this Diſcourſe, it was time now to think of parting; and they being mindful of the entertainment they were to give me the next day on board of their Ship, being out of my houſe furniſhed with ſome neceſſary proviſions, all parted from me.

CHAP. XXXIII.

He is treated by the Travellers on board of their Ship, where he ſees the two women-Travellers: he invites and entertains them at his houſe; where upon enquiry and diſcourſe, he diſcovers the two Women to be of his acquaintance when in England.

MY Company being thus parted from me, I began to conſider all the paſſages that had been this day related to me; and after a ſerious contemplation of them, I concluded, that I might place this day as the moſt remarkable in all my life; for I was acquainted with ſo much variety of experiences, as I had in a manner been hitherto wholly ignorant of; what had happened to me in the former part of my life, having been trivial in compariſon of what I had now lately heard: and I concluded, that if I ſhould have travelled to all parts of the world to have found out Companions fit for me, I could never have been better accommodated with thoſe that ſhould have been ſo agreeable to my natural inclination, then thoſe whom fortune had now brought to me. I had long ſince made it my reſolve, to make my life as comfortable as I could, according to the old ſaying amongſt thoſe of my quality, *Though a ſhort life, yet a merry:* and I ſaw Providence had put ſuch an

opportunity into my hands, that I had all things provided for me, and nothing before their arrival was wanting but ſuch a Society. For I had a plentiful eſtate, but that gave me little content, being without the ufual fociety of the Wits; and I now was likely not only to enjoy that in a full meafure, but alfo there was ſome female Company, the two Laffes in Mens apparel, who I underſtood were good Girls, and ſuch I hoped as would not prove hard-hearted, and deny one of their Country-men the ufual civility of their enjoyments: I did not much queſtion it, becaufe indeed I was fo much in favour with *Venus*, that I was hardly ever refufed that courteſie by any of her Votareffes.

I told my wife, there was a great likelihood of much profit to be gained by thefe Gueſts, who were refolved to take up my houfe wholly for their quarters, and therefore I ordered all things to be provided in ample manner for their conſtant entertainment: for though I was now rich enough, yet I knew not how foon fortune might turn tayl upon me, and therefore knowing that my Gueſts were all well provided with Moneys, I was refolved to put in with them for a ſhare of it: But I had no thoughts of wronging them, or putting any trick upon them; for it is accounted a very great crime in the greateſt proficient of Roguery, to cozen or cheat his fellow-Thief, and a thing feldome done amongſt them. I had now fome thoughts of leaving my black wife and that Country; and when thefe my new acquaintance ſhould leave this place for

another, as I ſuppoſe they would, then to go with them, for there was nothing there that gave any great invitation to ſtay in it, my inclination leading me rather to viſit ſome *European* Country.

Theſe conſiderations took me up ſome time; and night coming on, I betook me to my Cot, where I took my ordinary repoſe; and the next morning being come, I apparelled my ſelf the richeſt that I could, that I might add ſome grace to my perſon, being to viſit two of my Country-women, in whoſe favour I was deſirous to get ſome place. Being thus accoutred, I went to the Sea-ſide, and with the help of a Boat was ſoon aboard the Ship; where I was welcomed by the Captain and the reſt of the Company, and by them conducted into the great Cabin, where was no other Company but the two Women; who now being apparelled in their Womans habit *A la mode d'Anglois*, I was very well pleaſed, not having for a long time ſeen any thing ſo acceptable and pleaſant: I had not forgotten our Engliſh Faſhion of ſaluting them, neither were they backward in riſing and meeting me in order thereto: that done, I placed my ſelf between them; I ſoon began a diſcourſe to them, which I knew would not at all be diſpleaſing, and that was commending their Beauties, telling them, that if the preſent Emperour of the Country, the *Great Mogul*, did but underſtand what a treaſure he had in his Country by their arrival, that he would quickly ſecure it to himſelf, and hinder the proſecution of their

Voyage any further. To this they reply'd, that they did not believe he would fee any thing in them that ſhould merit ſuch an eſteem: but added one of them, If he ſhould do ſo, and be never ſo deſirous of my Company, yet I am better ſatisfied (in the Society that I am at preſent in poſſeſſion of) then if I were courted and ſerved by the greateſt Prince upon Earth.

To this ſo generous ſpeech, I repli'd, that thoſe perſons who had the honour to be her ſervants were in that very happy. Theſe Complements being paſs'd, drink was brought, and after that Victuals, which we had in great plenty, there being no want of any thing that could be had at the beſt mans table in *England*; and all the diſhes of Meat were dreſs'd in the Engliſh faſhion, by a Cook of that Country. After Dinner we fell again to diſcourſe, the Women being very deſirous of Novelties, and to be acquainted with the Cuſtoms of the Country, eſpecially of thoſe uſed by Women: but when I told them of that Cuſtom of the better ſort of Country-women, how they uſually accompanied their Husbands in death, by burning their living with their Husbands dead bodies, they were not very well pleaſed therewith, accounting it great folly: for, ſaid they, it cannot poſſibly do their Husbands any good, and why they ſhould ſo deſtroy themſelves out of a complement, was fooliſh. To paſs through, and accompany a Husband or Friend whilſt living in all dangers, is what is befitting; but there being no reme-

dy for death, nor no preſent enjoyment aſter death, thus to caſt away themſelves, is ridiculous. We allowed of their Opinions, as grounded upon reaſon: I asked them how they liked our Men, the Inhabitants; Not at all, ſaid one of them, as a Husband or Bed-fellow, but if there were no other man to be had, we muſt be contented with them, rather than none, as well as you are with the Native-women. Various were our Diſcourſes in which we entertained one another with much pleaſure, having a luſty bowl of Punch ſtill ſtanding by us, which as we drank off, we renewed, and at ſome of our frolicks, one of the great Guns was diſcharged. I had ey'd both theſe women very curiouſly, and did imagine, that, I had formerly ſeen them, and had ſome acquaintance with them. I knew one of them more particularly by the tone of her voice, but it having been ſo long ſince I had ſeen either, I could not call them to mind; I did not at all think it convenient to ask them any particular queſtions, referring that to a greater privacy. I being now acquainted with moſt of their tranſactions, they asked my advice in diſpoſing their moneys, and ſelling their Commodities, and what to buy to turn to the beſt advantage? To all theſe Queſtions I gave them the beſt anſwers I could, to their ſatisfaction; and now night coming on, I deſired to leave them, and invited them all to my houſe the next day, they not only concluded on that, but agreed that the Women ſhould conſtantly take my houſe for

their quarters, it being more convenient then on board of the Ship, they coming in their mens apparel, and I providing for them with all privacy; to this I agreed, and after a freſh cup of Wine, and my ordinary ſalutes to the women, I left them, and went home to my wife, who at my deſire provided all things neceſſary, not only for the next days entertainment, but for the future conveniency of my lodgers, who were not to be known to her for other than men.

The next day they came, and we were again all merry; but ſome occaſions calling away the men, the women were left alone with me. I was now reſolv'd to enquire whether they had never known me: they both replied, Not that they at preſent knew of; but they both ſaid, that certainly they had ſeen me in *England*, but at preſent they could not remember where: wherefore they prayed me to give them ſome account of my condition and quality when I lived in *England*: To this I repli'd, that I had been indeed of all conditions, and a very rambler, and it was a great chance, but if they had been in any publique houſe of Entertainment, that I might have ſeen them there: to this they both anſwered, that they had for ſome time been publique enough in entertaining Gentleman in their Company with much freedom: But, ſaid one of them, who was the Scriveners Miſtreſs, I have certainly ſeen and known you before I undertook any ſuch courſes, for if I be not miſtaken, you are the man did firſt deceive me, and therefore, I pray, tell me, if in your travels in *England*, you did not light into a Far-

mers houſe, and did ſome kindneſſes or diſcourteſies to his Daughter, and then left her. I hearing her ſay this, after ſome ſmall pauſe, recollected my ſelf, and ſeriouſly viewing her, concluded her to be the very Farmers Daughter whoſe Maidenhead I had bereaved her of, and in requital left her, and gave her no other ſatisfaction then a paper of Verſes. I now being reſolv'd in my opinion, ran to her, and embracing her, begg'd pardon for that affront, telling her, that it was onely one of thoſe many youthful tricks whereof I had been guilty. She at firſt out of ſence of the affront that I had done her, could not forbear weeping; but I gave her ſo many good words, that in fine ſhe was well enough ſatisfied, and lovingly permitted me to embrace and kiſs her.

The other woman hearing that my acquaintance with her Companion began with the loſs of her Virginity, muſed and bluſhed, and very ſtrictly beholding me, ſaid, And truly, if I be not miſtaken, I purchaſed my acquaintance with you with the ſame loſs: but I was deceived by you in a more ſubtil manner than this my Companion; for ſhe knowing you to be a man, permitted you to her bed (as ſhe hath formerly related to me.) But if you are the perſon that I mean (as I now think you are) you became my bedfellow by a miſtake; for not onely I, but many others of the Family believed you to be a Woman. I hearing her ſay this, fixed my eyes upon her, but could not yet perfectly remember her: but to the di-

ſcourſe ſhe made, I gave this anſwer; Truly Madam, I have been often guilty of Female frauds; and during the whole courſe of my life, I endeavoured chiefly to have the company of a Female; and I hope if you were one of thoſe with whom I lay at a Boarding-ſchool, where I went for a Servant-Maid, that you will forgive me that fact; for if it were not there, I then cannot tell where I ſhould have ſo much happineſs as to enjoy you. There it was, replyed ſhe, where I loſt my Virginity and honour, and which I have ſo often repented of; for I was then well-beloved of an indulgent Father, who for that fact caſt me off; and ever ſince I have been forced to wander like a Vagabond, and by infamous courſes to gain a livelyhood, and with this ſhe wept.

I was much amaz'd at theſe two adventures, and indeed pittyed them both; but more eſpecially the laſt, whom I had ſo long ſince deceaved; and feeing her tears, I kneel'd down to her, begging her pardon, and telling her that what was paſs'd, was not to be prevented or help'd; but if ſhe pleas'd, I would for the future be her humble ſervant in aſſiſting her in what I might. To this ſhe told me, that ſhe knew there was no remedy for what was paſſed; but that the remembrance of that firſt misfortune could not but ſenſibly afflict her, but ſhe ſhould throw off that ſorrow, and make the beſt of a bad matter; and thank providence, that ſince it was no better that it was no worſe: and

as ſhe had hitherto been well enough contented with her condition, ſo ſhe intended to frame her ſpirit and minde to be ſo for the future; and that now ſhe had the ſatisfaction ſhe had often deſired in ſeeing that perſon, who firſt taſted and crop'd her Virgin-Flower. Her Companion did likewiſe ſay, that it was the greateſt ſatisfaction ſhe had ever received ſince the loſs of my company, that ſhe had again found me; for (notwithſtanding my baſe and abrupt leaving her) ſhe had ſtill preſerved a more cordial love for me, then for any perſon ſhe had ever ſince then enjoy'd: The other ſaid the ſame, and though I was partly unknown to her, when I lay with her, as being diſguiſed in womans apparel; yet ſhe ſtill had me in her memory, and often wiſhed for the ſight of me: And from this diſcourſe we all concluded, that though a woman had many Husbands or Servants, yet ſhe ſeldom loved any man with ſo much affection, as him with whom ſhe firſt tryed and taſted the effects of love, and who had her Virginity.

Well Ladies, ſaid I, I am ſo much bound to you for preſerving an affection for me, who have ſo unworthily deſerved it, That I ſhall dedicate the remaining part of my life, wholly to obey and ſerve you. As for that profeſſion of your love now, ſaid the Drugſters Miſtreſs, (who was the youngeſt, and her, who I had enjoy'd at the Boarding-ſchool) it matters not much, for we have had experience enough in the

World to ſhift for our ſelves; and neither are we unprovided of thoſe who you know are our ſervants, and who will take care for us, and ſave you that trouble. No trouble at all, replyed I, but an honour which I pray you to beſtow on me to ſerve you in any degree.

They were very much ſurpriz'd, and ſo was I at this adventure: And I thought it was beſt to talk no more of it at preſent: wherefore I call'd for ſome Wine, and ſuch banqueting cheer as I had, and deſired them to participate of it, which they did; and ſo I at preſent diverted them from that profound melancholy, wherein they were brought upon this occaſion. At length they again reaſſumed their jovial temper; and beginning to be a little frollick, I aſſiſted them in that humour: but I was very earneſt to know their adventures, being, as I ſuppoſed ſomewhat concerned therein, they being both with Child by me when I left them; I therefore beg'd the ſatisfaction to know what did become of the Fruit of our enjoyments, thoſe Children which I ſuppoſe they had by me; for I told them I was not unſenſible of the condition I left them in, when I parted from them. Truly, reply'd the Drugſters Miſtreſs, who was named *Mary*, I know not at all what became of mine ſince it was born. And, ſaid the other, who was the Scriveners Miſtreſs, and was named *Dorothy*, and had been the Farmers Daughter, I know but little of mine ſince it was a year old. I was deſirous to hear of both of them their ſeveral fortunes, or rather misfortunes ſince I firſt knew them; and they agreeing to give me that

ſatisfaction, it was concluded that Mrs. *Mary*, with whom I had firſt to do, ſhould firſt relate her ſtory: and therefore ſhe began as ſolloweth.

CHAP. XXXIV.

Mrs. Mary *relates how that ſhe, being got with Child at the Boarding-ſchool, is renounced by her Parents, but provided for her by her Aunt, where ſhe lay in of a Daughter: after which ſhe is courted in way of marriage by a Gentleman, who hearing of her miſchance, inſtead of marriage onely abuſes her; and being ingaged in a quarrel about her, leaves her to ſhift for her ſelf,* &c.

IN the diſcourſe that I ſhall make to you concerning thoſe accidents or misfortunes that have befallen me, I ſhall neither be reſerved nor tedious, but plain and ſhort; for I have no reaſon to diſguiſe any of my actions to two ſuch perſons, who are ſo generally well acquainted with the general affairs of the World, and who have ſuch a particular knowledge of me: Though, ſaid ſhe to me, I muſt needs confeſs I received very much pleaſure in the firſt imbraces I had with you; when, though I ſuppoſed my ſelf in bed with one of my own Sex, yet I found the contrary, and then taſted the pleaſures of a Male bedfellow: though, ſaid I, the ſweets of that converſe were delightful at pre-

ſent; yet I have through that onely occaſion ſuffered many croſſes, and been accompanied with much affliction and trouble, which ſoon overtook me.

I was very young, not being above ſixteen years of age when I firſt lay with you; and ſo innocent I was at that age, that I did not imagine that I ſhould have found ſo ſudden an alteration in my body, as was thereby occaſioned; neither did I conceive what would be the effects thereof, till ſome of my other companions, who had lain with you before me, were diſcovered to be ſick, and the occaſion of their diſtemper being enquired into, it was found they were with Child, and then I did gueſs my ſelf to be in the ſame condition.

I ſuppoſe you are not ignorant of what you had done, and therefore took your flight; but though you contrived your eſcape cunningly enough by putting on mens apparel, yet it was obſerved, and you were followed ſo narrowly, that we ſuppoſed you had been taken, but it proved otherwiſe. Yes, replied I, when I made my eſcape, I made for *London*, and being habited in a ſuit of Clothes of my Miſtreſſes ſons, I was fearful of being diſcovered and known by them, and therefore meeting with a young man of my acquaintance: I remember, I perſwaded him to exchange Clothes with me, and ſo I eſcaped; but I would gladly know how he came off. Truely, replied Mrs. *Mary*, that ſtory was ſomewhat ſtrange, for the Conſtable who feized him, had orders not to make much noiſe in the mat-

ter, but only to ſecure him at preſent in his own houſe, which he having done, came to our Boarding-School, and acquainted our Miſtreſs that he had ſecured the party; this being known, my Miſtreſs ſent her ſon whoſe Clothes were ſtollen to the place; where in ſtead of finding our maid *Jane* (for by that name, I remember you went, when you lived with us) he ſaw a ſtrange young man in his Clothes, though he was told before you had his Clothes on, which he yet ſaw before him, yet he knew you well enough, not to be ſo miſtaken: for the party that was in that habit was nothing like you; he therefore thought that all that had been reported to him was falſe, till he had made a further enquiry of the young man your friend, who was firſt asked, where he had thoſe Clothes: he not knowing any reaſon he ſhould deny any thing of the truth, freely and fully acknowledged that he had them in exchange of his own, of a young man his friend; and being asked many other queſtions, As whether he knew you? and knew you to be a man? and where this exchange was made? He fully refolved his Examiners of all queſtions, and proved the exchange of Clothes by the people of the houſe where the exchange was made.

My Miſtreſſes ſon being returned with this anſwer to his Mother, it cauſed great wonder in all who were not privy to your diſguize, but there being about ſeven or eight of us, who were knowing of that ſecret, and were known to lie with you, we were all privately examined, and

ſome of us having been ſick for ſome time before, and now ſtrictly examined of the cauſe, and whether we knew any thing of your diſguize, and whether you were man or woman; we could not hide or deny our knowledge thereof. Upon this diſcovery, our Miſtreſs (though ſhe was termed a very diſcreet perſon) was ſo outragious, that we thought ſhe would have loſt the ordinary uſe of her Sences; and ſeveral revenges ſhe propounded to take of you, not thinking you were eſcaped her power: but when ſhe underſtood that you were gone, ſhe cauſed all privy ſearch and enquiry to be made after you, but to no purpoſe. The young man, your friend, who had been ſecured, was diſcharged, as being found wholly innocent of the crime; and neither was he deprived of his Clothes, but had them freely given to him, and a good ſum of money promiſed him if he could find and ſecure you: but though much endeavour was uſed to find you, yet I could never hear any thing of you, till this late encounter.

But to proceed in my ſtory, our Miſtreſs upon ſecond thoughts reſolved to keep this buſineſs private for ſome longer time, to ſee how many of thoſe ſeven or eight with whom you had lain, would prove with child; and it was not long before ſhe found that five of the number were pregnant, whereof I was one. How ſhe ordered the matter with the reſt, I know not; but for my own part, my father being made acquainted with my misfortune, wholly refuſed to take any care or notice of me; neither have I ever

ſince ſeen his face; for though I ſuppoſe he loved me well enough; yet I had a Mother-in-law, who might perſwade him to ſlight me, and made uſe of this occaſion to throw me off: but though I was thus caſt off by my father, yet I had an Aunt, who was ſiſter to my own mother, who came and viſited me; and finding that what was paſs'd could not be help'd, took me home with her to her houſe, where after the uſual time of Womens breeding and bearing children, I was delivered of a Daughter, which was ſoon after its birth ſent further into the Country to be nurſed: and I ſuppoſe it was carried thus privately, in hopes to ſoulder up the crack that might be in my reputation, which though it did for the preſent, yet it ſoon after brake out again.

For a young Gentleman who lived in the next Town to that where my Aunt dwelt, having ſeen me, fell deeply in love with me, and often waited on me at my Aunts, and took many opportunites of meeting me abroad. Though I liked and loved him well enough, and could have been pleaſed to have entertained his love with liking at the firſt offer of it, yet I was commanded by my Aunt to ſtand off, and be coy in my entertaining of him, leſt, as ſhe ſaid, he might by my freeneſs ſuſpect me of lightneſs: for the matter had been ſo privately carried in my lying in, that it was not known to him, nor any, but ſome few in the Houſe; and to all others I paſſed as a Virgin. I taking this advice of my Aunt, gave him but indifferent entertainment;

ſo that he who was paſſionately in love with me, deviſed all ways he could to woe, pleaſe and win me; and to that end he not only preſented me with many Gifts, as marks of his affection, but alſo (according to cuſtom) and that ſo largely, that ſhe promiſed him all her aſſiſtance, and gave him notice of all opportunities whereby he might wait on me, and pleaſe me. All things were now brought to a very good paſs, and my Aunt had ſo prudently managed this affair, that my Father was content to part from a conſiderable ſum of money for my advancement; which was to the full ſatisfaction of the Gentleman who courted me.

There wanted nothing now to conclude this affair but the accompliſhment of a few days, in which all Writings were to be ſealed, and the Wedding to be conſummated; when all was undone, and in that I undone, by the treachery and perfidiouſneſs of this my ſervant-maid. For ſhe having received Gifts of the young Gentleman, and I having angred her in a trivial matter, ſhe to be revenged on me, did acquaint my Suitor with my condition, and that I ſhould not die of my firſt child, for he ſhould be a father the firſt day of Marriage. Although at her firſt declaring this matter to him, he could not give credit thereto, yet ſhe affirmed the ſame with ſo many, and ſo earneſt aſſeverations, that he was confirmed in that belief, and therefore enjoyning her to ſecreſie and aſſiſtance, and to that end preſenting her with ſomewhat that was conſiderable, he left her; and now

being reſolved to deceive me as I intended him; he ordered his affairs accordingly, and to that end he cauſed ſome delay to be uſed in the Writings.

We being now, as I thought, as good as man and Wiſe, I entertained him with much freedom, and he courted me with leſs obſervance, coming now cloſer to me in his ſalutes and embraces: I was ſo pleaſed with him in all his actions, that I became wholly at his Devotion, and therefore without the conſent and knowledge of my Aunt, we went together out of the Town to a merry-making of ſeveral of his Acquaintance, where we ſtay'd ſomewhat late, and he having cauſed me to drink to a good height, made a halt by the way, and we went into an Inn of his Acquaintance, he pretending ſomewhat was amiſs in one of his Horſes ſhoes: here we having privacy, he attempted to be more free with me then ever, and prevailed ſo far with me, that he had the examining of my Plackett, with more freedom then modeſty would allow of; but though he would have proceeded further, yet I refuſed it; he ſeeing this deſiſted, and we again remounted our Horſes, and he conducted me ſafely to my Aunts: but although it was very late, yet ſhe ſat up, and expected me; and expreſſed her ſelf very angry with him for keeping me out ſo unſeaſonably; he did not well relliſh her words, but reply'd ſomewhat tartly to her again; which encreaſed her anger, and raiſed it to ſome paſſion, and ſo in anger they at that time parted, he riding home to his own houſe. I was likewiſe ſuf-

ficiently ſchool'd by my Aunt; but I excuſed all with ſoft anſwers, and pleading obedience, which I thought I was bound to pay him, being our Marriage was ſo ſoon to be celebrated.

My Lover was reſolved to make uſe of that days experience of my eaſineſs, and my Aunts anger, which he was well enough pleaſed ſhould continue, and therefore forbore coming to viſit me; but he ſent a meſſenger to my Maid (who had betray'd me) to give him a meeting: ſhe obeyed his ſummons, and there, and then was my ruine contrived; for it was agreed between them two, that ſhe ſhould perſwade me to be ruled by him in every thing, without acquainting my Aunt any more with my proceedings; and a Letter was written, wherein he expreſſed a continuance of his love, and deſires of mine; and for a proof thereof, he deſired me to provide my ſelf to meet him at a place appointed; which I did, and there we concluded to go for *London* together, where he promiſed to marry me without any more delays. I believing him in every thing (being perſwaded thereto by my treacherous ſervant) took onely ſome few neceſſaries with me, and ſo went to him. And thus leaving all, went with him to *London*, where when we were arrived, he went to ſome lodgings which he had provided, as he ſaid, for himſelf and wife. I was at firſt contented with the diſcourſe and name of wife; but when bed-time came, I was not fully ſatisfied to go to bed with him; which though I at firſt oppoſed, yet in the end, after many proteſ-

tations of his next days performance of marriage, I conſented to, and thereby agreed to my undoing; for the next day, inſtead of marriage, he went out in the morning, leaving me onely with the Landlady of the houſe, and returned not in two days; and then he pretended he had been in great vexation, for that the morning he left me, he being going to ſpeak with a Prieſt to marry us, he was met with by a perſon, to whom he was a little indebted, who baſely trappan'd and arreſted him, and he was forced to be in the cuſtody of Bayliffs ever ſince, till he had perſwaded a friend to lend him ſome monies, which together with what he had of his own, he ſaid he had paid to his debtor, and ſo was diſcharged. And now, ſaid he to me, I have ſent home for ſome more monies, which I know will be brought me in two days time, and then I ſhall put an end to this buſineſs of our marriage.

Although I ſeemed diſcontented with what he told me, and did begin to believe that he would abuſe me; yet I knew it was to no purpoſe to be very angry, and onely cauſed him to give me freſh proteſtations of the honeſty of his intentions, and that as ſoon as ever his money was come, he would fulfil all my deſires.

Thus was I forced to be contented with what he ſaid, and to comply with him in all his deſires: for we lay together; but I kept within doors very privately, refuſing to be ſeen by any body, till ſuch time as our Wedding ſhould be over.

But though two or three days and a week was now paſt ſince he pretended he had ſent into the Country for money, yet there came no returns; at which I was very much diſcontented, he alſo ſeeming diſſatisſyed. I then told him, that I had brought a ſmall ſum of money with me, which I ſuppoſed would be ſufficient to pay the charges of that occaſion. He asked me how much I had, I told him about 10 *l.* I remember he was ſomewhat blanck, and at a nonpluſs at this propoſition: but he ſoon recovering himſelf, told me that he expected 100*l.* to be brought him, and that would be little enough to deſray all the charge he intended to be at; for he propoſed to lay it all out in Clothes for me and himſelf, that we might appear the more ſplendidly, not only to ſome friends in *London*, whom he propoſed to viſit ſoon after marriage, but alſo in the Country whither he intended in ſhort time to return to demand my portion, and ſettle all things according to the agreement of our friends: and as for the ſmall ſum of 10*l.* he told me I would have occaſion to lay it out in trivial things on that occaſion.

Thus was I put off at this time; and indeed ſo often afterwards, that I in plain terms told him that I ſuppoſed he intended to abuſe me, he being reſolved to ſtand the brunt of all my exclamations at this time, did not endeavour, as formerly to pacifie me, but rather provoked me to ſay more, and be more angry with him, which I was, and reproached him with

the abuſe he had done me. He having heard the utmoſt of what I could ſay, in ſhort told me, that he was the abuſed party; for ſhould he marry me, as he intended, he ſhould have a greater charge to maintain then I had told him of, for he had underſtood that I was Mother of a Childe; and ſo the abuſe that I would put on him was double: I was ſo ſurpriſed with what he ſaid, that I was more dead then alive, and could not for a long time ſpeak to him? and when I attempted it, I knew not what to ſay for my ſelf, for he directly told me, that he was acquainted with every particular of that my misfortune: and thus having ſaid, he left me.

Many and ſad were the thoughts I entertained in my minde, and I perceived my ſelf to be miſerable: for to return to my Aunt, I knew it would be to no purpoſe, I having thus abuſed her in my laſt leaving her. Therefore I concluded it was my beſt courſe at preſent to comply with the deſires of my firſt Lover, not knowing whom to flee to for refuge; wherefore at his return home, I began to him in tears to lament my ſad condition, begging his pardon for what was paſt, cleerly confeſſing the truth of all my former misfortune, and that I would for the future be very obedient and conſtant to him in all things: he gave me the hearing of what I ſaid, and told me all ſhould be well; but I could never finde him after that inclinable to marry me, onely putting me off with one pretence or other; and having a full enjoyment of me already, cared for no more: and now to content and pleaſe

him, I muſt not only entertain ſeveral of his friends at home at our lodging, but alſo wait on him abroad; and inſtead of Wife, I paſſed for his Cozen.

Amongſt other perſons that came to viſit him, there was a Gentleman of good quality, who being of his intimate Acquaintance, was frequent at our Lodgings: he taking his opportunity to find me alone, made a tender of his love and ſervice to me, and offered me his aſſiſtance in every thing I ſhould command him. I finding that he underſtood ſomewhat of my condition already, and believing it would be to no purpoſe to conceal any thing from him, did make him an exact and true narrative of my misfortunes: he was much troubled at the recital of things ſo ſtrange, but did comfort me the beſt he could, promiſing me his beſt aſſiſtance in putting his friend on to perform his promiſie of Marriage: for, ſaid he, I know little reaſon he hath to deny or refuſe it. For your firſt misfortune at the Boarding-School, was ſo ſubtil a buſineſs, that you cannot well be blamed for it.

This Gentleman accordingly did endeavour to poſſeſs my hoped for Husband with that opinion, and to perſwade him to marry me, but all in vain; for he had now all the ſweets he could expect from me, having lain with me now for above a moneth together, and in that time I endeavoured with all the artifice I could, to give him all poſſible content: but he was now cloy'd; and therefore told his friend, that for his Mi-

ſtreſs he intended to keep me, but never to have me for a Wife. I was neer diſtracted when this anſwer was told me; but the Gentleman did again comfort me, promiſing that he hoped in ſhort time to put all things to rights again. I ſeeing it was to no purpoſe to be angry, reſolved to bear all things with patience, and ſeem to be frolick, which was to a good height; and this Gentleman ſeeing me in ſo merry a humor, was deſirous to put in for a ſhare in the pleaſure of my enjoyments, and to that end now courted me indeed: he had been ſo civil to me in theſe late tranſactions, that I could not handſomely reſuſe him any thing; but however, I for ſome time held out againſt all his loving importunities; but he having an abſolute freedome in our lodging, ſo waited his opportunity, that he won me to his embraces, and had a full poſſeſſion of me. Thus was I enjoyed by two men; but my laſt lover was very cautious in keeping this his enjoyment from the knowledge of his friend, and we took opportunities in his abſence to renew our pleaſures. But at length we grew ſo bold in theſe practices, that my firſt Lover diſcovered us, and watching his opportunity by hiding himſelf in the Chamber, he took us in the manner. He diſcovering himſelf, uſed many outragious ſpeeches to me and my Companion, as, that he abuſed him, in perſwading and urging him to marry with one who was his proſtitute: the other flew out into high expreſſions; and being valorous enough, they

drew their weapons, and before I could get any to interpoſe and hinder their fight, my new Lover was wounded, and that, ſo deſperately, that he fell; the other ſeeing that, and ſuppoſing him killed, fled, and ſo left me: and my wounded friend being viſited by Chirurgeons, recovered a little, but deſired to be removed to his own Lodgings, left he might be prejudiced by the various reports that would run upon this occaſion; I was likewiſe willing to have it ſo, as thinking it moſt convenient.

Thus was I left alone, and I, who lately had two Lovers and Servants, was now left without any; for my old Friend came no more after me, and my new Servant who was wounded, was forced for his health-ſake to be carried into the Country.

Now did I find my ſelf truly diſtreſſed, for I wholly retired my ſelf, not ſeeing any man, and was only accompanied by my Landlady, and another antient woman who frequented her houſe. In vain did I expect the return of either of my Lovers, and almoſt all my Moneys was gone, in Diet, and for payment of Lodging. My Landlady propoſed ſeveral ways and courſes for me to take, as to ſend to my firſt friend who brought me thither, which I did, but could not hear of him; ſhe would have had me ſend to my Aunt, but I wholly refuſed ſo to do, being reſolved to bear with any neceſſities, rather then again to apply my ſelf to her.

The other old woman, who, I told you, frequented our houſe, did then put in ſome words

to the Diſcourſe, and my Landlady leaving us together, ſhe told me, that if I would be ruled by her, ſhe would ſo order matters, that I ſhould want for nothing, and live the moſt pleaſanteſt life in the World. I who was now miſerable enough, was well enough pleaſed to hear of pleaſure, and bid her ſay on : She thereupon told me, that it was great pity that ſo delicate a beauty as mine ſhould be cloſeted up, and that I ſhould ſpend that time in tears and lamentations, which might not only be a pleaſure to my ſelf, but many others who would love me with a great deal of paſſion ; and whereas hitherto I had only been reſerved to ſerve the pleaſures of one man, or two at the moſt, and for that I had only reap'd ſorrow and trouble, that I might command many, who would, not only pleaſe and ſerve me, but I ſhould command their purſes by having money enough at my own diſpoſe. Many words to this purpoſe ſhe uttered, and many Arguments ſhe uſed. Though at the firſt I did not underſtand what ſhe aimed at, yet by ſeveral Queſtions, which ſhe anſwered me, I found ſhe would have me proſtitute my body for my pleaſure, and to gain a livelyhood ; and in fine, ſhould get my living with the hands I fat on.

Though I had taſted man, as firſt with you, and afterwards had two at a time, my two late Lovers, and by that was induced to deſire more of the ſame pleaſures, yet I was extreamly unwilling to proſtitute my body to every fellow that ſhould bring money in his hand ; and this

I ſuppoſed I muſt do, if once I undertook that courſe. Thus I reaſoned with this old woman, but ſhe told me, No, I ſhould not do ſo, for I ſhould only have my choice of what, and whom I liked, and few of ſuch would be profitable enough to maintain me in a ſplendid Garb; and to this ſhe gave me ſo many reaſons; that I conſenting to leave my Lodgings, went with her to the place where ſhe conducted me.

CHAP. XXXV.

She gives an account of her being entred into a Bawdy-houſe, where ſhe received great profit by the ſale of her Maidenhead.

I Being now come to the place intended, was entertained by a Grave ancient Matron, in whoſe face might be ſeen the ruines of no common beauty; and the defects of that being occaſioned by age, was ſufficiently ſupplied in a deportment and garb that was not common, though it were very pleaſant. She gave me many welcomes, and told me that ſhe had a very great reſpect for me, having heard of my misfortunes, and hoping that ſhe might put an end to my ſorrows, and afford me freſh pleaſures: ſhe had to that end employed that antient woman as her Meſſenger, to perſwade me to leave that houſe of Mourning wherein I was, for hers, which was a Pallace, nay, a Paradice of pleaſure, wherein I ſhould be accompanied with all manner of contentment. I told her I ſhould be willingly obedient to her commands, in expectation of thoſe pleaſures ſhe promiſed. Several other Diſcourſes we had, whereby ſhe gave me inſtructions how to behave my ſelf; and, ſaid ſhe, ſince you intend to make one of my family, I ſhall give you an account of my manner and method in governing the ſame.

My houſe; continued ſhe, being frequented by perſons of all Qualities, it is therefore neceſ-

ſary that I ſhould be furniſhed with women, who ſhould be proper and fit for their reſpective accommodations, for the Servants and Pages muſt be ſometimes ſerved as well as their Maſters; I therefore diſtinguiſh thoſe women that belong unto me into three ſeveral ſorts and diſtinctions; and becauſe I intend to make uſe of you only in the firſt and principal, I ſhall therefore be more particular in my Diſcourſe to you of that.

You are therefore to know, that as my houſe is well enough furniſhed with women to accommodate my ordinary Gueſts, ſo I have ſeveral who are kept abroad, who ſerve for the extraordinary accommodation of my beſt ſort of Gueſts, and thoſe are ſuch as are ſo ſqueamiſh ſtomacked, that will not ſee one face above two or three times; with theſe a Maidenhead is a very great dainty, for they lay out with me for one, ſometimes a quarter or half a year together. Now though I know you have parted from yours already, yet I queſtion not but to make a good Merchandize of yours, and get a good round ſum of money for you and my ſelf; and if you will be ruled by me in every thing, I ſhall ſo manage the buſineſs, that you ſhall not have to do with above two or three in a twelve moneths time, and they ſhall be ſuch, as ſhall not only maintain you in a brave garb and equipage, but you ſhall gain many Jewels, and a good round ſum of money. To this Diſcourſe I replied, that I hoped ſhe would perform what ſhe ſaid, and in expectation thereof, I ſhould diſpoſe my ſelf to be wholly directed by her.

This I remember was our firſt Diſcourſe, or to this purpoſe, and ſhe preſently ordered me a Lodging within a few doors of her houſe, where I had ſuch another as my ſelf for my Companion, and we were very well accommodated with every thing; my habit was ſomewhat altered, for I was now put into the moſt exact mode that was then in beſt eſteem. According to her Directions I carried my ſelf in every thing; and once a day I waited on her, or elſe ſhe came to me. I had not been there many days before ſhe told me that there was an opportunity to begin my buſineſs, and therefore ſhe adviſed me to go the next day to a Play; and ſet my ſelf out in the beſt manner that I could; but ſhe adviſed me by all means to decline drinking, or entertaining any Diſcourſe with any perſon, though I ſhould be importuned thereto, I promiſed obedience to her commands; and my Companion, who was my Bed-fellow, attended me to the Play-houſe, where by giving great attention to the Comedy that was acted, I did not mind thoſe who made it their chief buſineſs to gaze on me. The Play being done, I went out, but was ſtayed by two Gentlemen (who by their Habits ſeemed of quality) who offered me their ſervice to wait on me. I at firſt anſwered them with ſilence; but they ſeeing I had no other Company but my Bed-fellow, were very importunate to have me accept of theirs. I told them that they were ſtrangers, and therefore durſt not admit of their kind offer: Having ſaid thus, I called for a Coach, and though they ſtill importuned me to accept of their Company, yet I abſolutely refuſed it, and ſo

cauſed the Coachman to drive home. That evening was I viſited by our Matrona, who told me, I had done well, for ſhe had an account given her of my deportment: for, ſaid ſhe, it is not unknown to me that you were offered the ſervice of two Gentlemen, one of which is a perſon who is a retainer to my houſe, an old beaten Souldier, and ſeveral ſuch we are forced to keep correſpondency withal, that we may have new freſh gueſts brought to our houſe. The other Gentleman, ſaid ſhe, is one who hath a long time laid out for a freſh bit, and he was carried to the Playhouſe on purpoſe to ſee you; whom I gave my correſpondent his companion ſo juſt an account of, that he could not miſs knowing of you: they both followed your Coach to your Lodgings, and have ſince been at mine, and my young Coxcomb is very much ſmitten with your beauty, and offers any thing that he may enjoy your Company. I have promiſed him my aſſiſtance, but he muſt come off well firſt; and I queſtion not but to manage him ſo, as in few days you ſhall find the effects of his love in ſome noble preſent, therefore, ſaid ſhe, fail not to be directed by me, and I doubt not but you will reap much pleaſure and profit. I having promiſed a juſt compliance to her deſires, ſhe departed, leaving me in the company of her Bedfellow, who that night entertained me with a large account of her Aduentures.

I remember ſhe told me, that when ſhe firſt came acquainted with our Matrona, ſhe was pick'd up almoſt in the ſame manner as I had been; and that in leſs then two monthes her Maidenhead was

ſold ſix times, for which ſhe had gained in preſents to the value of fifty pounds; and I ſuppoſe, ſaid he, our Matrona gained above as much more in mony: ſince then, ſaid ſhe, my firſt Cuſtomers have but rarely viſited me; and ſhe having no more Cuſtomers for my Maidenhead, I now paſs for a Merchants wife, and am often ſent for in that name; and I ſeldome miſs a day without one or two Cuſtomers, who entertain me as ſuch a perſon. She being thus free with me, I thought good to ask her ſome more Queſtions, as, how ſhe paid for her Diet and Lodging? and from whence ſhe had Clothes? To this ſhe anſwered, that for the firſt half year her Diet was paid for by the Matrona, who indeed had all the Money that was gained by her; and as for Clothes, ſhe had them firſt of all lent, or given by her, and ſince given her by thoſe who had to deal with her: and now, ſaid ſhe, I pay for my own Diet, and have all the Money that is given me, and all the profit ſhe hath, is in ſelling her Wine and other things ſhe vendeth at our Collations; and now and then I ſuppoſe ſhe gets half a piece or a piece of a new Cuſtomer by procuring me.

I was ſomewhat ſatisfied with this Diſcourſe, and the next day I was viſited by the old woman (who brought me firſt acquainted with our Matrona) who brought me a Letter from my Amorous Gallant; I remember it was ſtuffed with Complements, and all the happineſs he deſired, was to ſee me once more at the Playhouſe. In this affair I taking advice with our Matrona, it was reſolved I ſhould return no anſwer; but however,

within two days, I again went to the Playhouſe, where I was no ſooner ſeated, but I was attended by my Gallant, and now I could not decline his Company: during the Play he treated me with all manner of fruits, and ſuch things as could be purchaſed there; and the Play being done, he offered me a farther treat at ſome other place; but I refuſed that, as alſo any further converſe with him, and again calling for a Coach, I went home, refuſing his Company, and being very ſhye and coy to all his Propoſals, which though many, yet prevailed not all upon me.

The next day I had another Letter ſent me, as alſo a Diamond-Ring of twenty pound price as a preſent; I accepted of both, and then promiſed within two days to meet him again at the Playhouſe, where my Gallant came richly accoutred in all his bravery, I then entertained diſcourſe with him, and the Play being ended, I at his earneſt importunity accepted of a Treat he quickly provided for me at the next Tavern. I then told him, that I durſt not ſtay, for I expected my Unkle to come and viſit me that evening at my Lodging, who was to bring me news out of the Country about my father: he being deſirous to pleaſe me, conſented to my departure, I promiſing to give him another meeting at a place we appointed the next day, and thus we again parted. I was now ſo far engaged with him; that I the next day again met him, and he then courted me for enjoyment; but I ſeeming very angry, he to pacifie me, gave me a gold Watch, and then I permitted him to embrace and kiſs me; and though I con-

tradicted his proceeding further with me, yet he found by me, that in time he might arrive to it. In this apprehenſion he was very prodigal in his promiſes, and what great things he would do, if I would permit him ſo great a happineſs, he oftentimes wiſhing himſelf a ſingle-man (for he was married) that he might make himſelf happy in ſo brave a Wife, as he knew I would be. Theſe Diſcourſes and others which he uſed, and thoſe many ſtrict embraces which he gave me, did ſomewhat move me with the titillations of the fleſh; and I had much ado to continue inexorable: but remembring how I had been deceived formerly, and withal knowing that I had not our Matrona's order as yet for fruition, I therefore contradicted my own thoughts and wanton deſires, and refuſed to let him proceed to any other ſatisfaction then what he could get by kiſſing and embracing me, and handling my breſts and neck; and ſo we again parted, I being ſtill attended by my Bedfellow.

We were no ſooner come home, but ſhe was ſent for by our Matrona, to whom ſhe gave an account of our actions: but that was not all her buſineſs, for when ſhe returned home, and we were in bed together, ſhe told me that ſhe had been at the ſport with a brave Gallant, with whom ſhe had received great pleaſure, for he was newly come to Town, and willing enough to have continued the ſport longer, but that it was late, and therefore they had referred a continuance of the pleaſures to the next day; and that ſhe had not only pleaſure, but profit, for he had given her three Crowns, and promiſed to be more beneficial to her during his ſtay in *London.*

This Diſcourſe of hers, the remembrance of what ſhe had been at, and what I might have received if I would, did very much fire me, and I then took up a reſolve not much longer to delay thoſe pleaſures I had now ſo long been without; and thereupon being viſited the next day by my Servant (and having the permiſſion of my Matrona ſo to do) I entertained him with ſomewhat more freedom then formerly, and went with him to the houſe of our Matrona, as if a great ſtranger there; and now was I doubly courted, not only by him, but her; ſo that I permitted him enjoyment, and he ſo well pleaſed me, that at his further earneſt importunity I conſented to lie with him all night, where I ſatisfied him and my ſelf in all thoſe amorous ſweets that two willing Lovers could receive or give.

Whilſt I was thus occupied at our Matrona's houſe, my Bedfellow was not idle; for ſhe underſtanding my place would be void, was reſolved to have it ſupplied, and therefore ſummoned her Country Gentleman, who very readily attended her, and for that night was her Bed-fellow. He was ſo pleaſed with her Company in the night, that he deſired it the next day at a frolick at a Tavern. She accordingly attended him, where a plentiful Dinner was provided, there being four or five Gentlemen, and two Women beſides her ſelf. Dinner being ended, and ſome quantity of Wine drank off, they all began to be merry, and therefore a noiſe of Fidlers were call'd, and they all fell to ſinging and dancing, in which they ſpent ſome time; and the other two women being likewiſe Ladies of the right ſtamp, they did by turns leave the reſt of the Company, and retire by Couples

into a private Room, where they had the conveniency of a Bed, and thus they ſpent moſt part of the Day. Night drawing on, reckoning was call'd for; but it being a large one, all the Gentlemen were diſſatisfied, not being willing to pay ſo dear for their pleaſure, and to have ſuch four ſawce to their ſweet meat: the Fidlers being paid, they reſolv'd to put a trick upon the Vintner for his reckoning. The Fidlers now playing their laſt Leſſon, the Gentlemen one after another made their ſeveral *exits*, leaving the three women to pay the ſcore; who for ſome time waited the return of the Gentlemen with money, but in vain. The Maſter of the houſe underſtanding how he was likely to be ſerv'd, came up to the Women, and gave them ſuch a leſſon as made them ſing *lachrimæ*: they made many Apologies and excuſes, but in vain, mony or a ſufficient pawn he would have before they went. They conſidering the neceſſity of the buſineſs, reſolved to leave ſome of their Rings and ſuch-like Moveables for their enlargement. Agreeing on the manner, they were now conſidering the matter, what, & how much ſhould be leſt, when two or three men entred the Room, and bluntly asked for the Women, naming them by their ſeveral names. Not only they, but the Maſter of the houſe was of opinion, that they were come with Mony to redeem them; but their Errand prov'd not ſo pleaſant to the Vintner: for theſe men declar'd themſelves to be Bayliffs, and their buſineſs was to arreſt the three Women at ſeveral actions, and to that end produced their Warrant. The Women were much troubled, and began to exclaim that they owed no ſuch ſums; but the officers who were not to

be baffled, told them, they were their Priſoners, and muſt along with them. The Vintner now put in, and demanded ſatisfaction, and would have the women leave ſome pawn for the Reckoning; but the Officers told them, that they had beſt keep what they had for occaſion for it upon which they might have account of the Arreſt; and for the Reckoning, the Vintner muſt take his courſe at Law. The Vintner for ſome time oppoſed the officers, and ſaid he would be paid firſt and although a Conſtable was ſent for, yet to no purpoſe, for the Warrant being produc'd, they were permitted to march off with their Priſoners; and a Coach being call'd for they all crowded into it, ordering the Coachman to drive towards the Gaol.

The Women uſed many arguments to the Bayliffs, who now having done their buſineſs, ſeemed only at the requeſt of the Women, to attend them to a Tavern, whither the Coachman had orders to drive, and there they were conducted into a Room, where in ſtead of Bayliffs, and a Priſon, they had the Company of their day Companions, who now kindly welcom'd them, and acquainted them of their ſrollick, and how all this was only deſigned to cheat the Vintner of his Reckoning, who had formerly put tricks upon them. All parties being now well pleaſed, they ſpent that night in the Tavern together, and my companion coming home the next day, acquainted me with this Story.

CHAP. XXXVI.

In profecution of her Extravagancies, ſhe comes acquainted with a young Gentleman, with whom ſhe acts ſeveral frolicks, occaſioned by ſeeing Playes acted.

THis, continued Mrs. *Mary* was my beginning, or entrance into my publick profeſſion, and indeed, I cannot well call it publick, for I was private and reſerved: not admitting any more ſervants but this one, in one moneth; and indeed, in the firſt half year, I had but three, but they were ſo bountiful, that I had wherewithal to ſatisfie my ſelf in every thing: having in Jewels, and other preſents to the value of 100*l.* Neither had I any thing to pay for diet, or lodging, the charge of that being always born by our *Matrona*, who I found had gained above 60*l.* in mony, for procuration, and aſſiſtance in winning me; beſides, a great deal more mony ſpent at her houſe in Collations, & entertainments for me, which were very frequent and coſtly. The trade for Maiden-heads falling, the price being ſo great, I was now forced to fight under another Banner, and though I did not paſs for a maid; yet I was accounted in the next degree, for I paſſed as the Miſtreſs, or Lady of Pleaſure, of a Perſon of Quality, who kept me as a great rarity for his own dyet; and indeed I did not much deceive my

firſt cuſtomers upon that account; for whereas I went under the notion of belonging to one Perſon, I did belong to but three: and I was forced to play my game pretty cunningly to pleaſe them, and not give them ſuſpition of one another, for they being all introduced into my acquaintance by our *Matrona*, or ſome of her Agents, ſhe did help to manage my affairs; and when ſhe knew I was to accompany, or lye with one of my ſweet hearts, ſhe would tell the other, if he or they deſired the ſame, that it could not be for the preſent, for either, I was waiting on my Uncle, or ſome other relation, or otherwiſe employed, that I muſt be excuſed at the preſent: but againſt ſuch a time, ſhe would endeavour to procure me to accompany them; and this was her tale, or mine; when more then one importuned me with their viſits, and by this means did we both gain the mony, and I, Rings, Necklaces, Watches and new Gowns, and ſometimes ſome Gold to ſpend, or play away; but in time theſe three growing ſomewhat weary, or tyred both in their bodies and purſes; but eſpecially in the laſt, they by degrees leſt me, ſeldom viſiting me; and when they did, they would deſire their pleaſure on free coſt, although I could not be ſo ungrateful as to deny them, that which coſt me nothing, and which I had equal pleaſure in, yet I ſaw, it was time to look out for other better cuſtomers; and therefore as I told you, I paſſed as the Miſtreſs of a Perſon of Quallity, and was ſent for to our *Madonas* houſe, whether I would pretend, I had ſtolen out, but durſt not ſtay, leaſt my amorous Maſter

ſhould return and want me: Several Perſons I enjoyed at this rate, and much ready mony was coming to me; for they with whom I had to do, underſtanding I was a profeſſed Lady of Pleaſure, knew well enough that I would not be contented to pleaſure them without a reward; and therefore they gave me money. But now the caſe was ſomwhat altred, and I muſt now pay for my dyet, for our *Madona*, had, as I told you, a certain cuſtom, or rule: which ſhe walked by, which was this: that at the firſt ſhe paid for dyet and lodging as long as the Maidenhead cuſtomers laſted; for all that time ſhe took the mony, and the Woman the preſents, very little mony coming to their hands; and indeed it was not by our rules thought honourable or convenient, that a price in money ſhould be given on that account, to the party herſelf; but when they came under the notion of a Lady of Pleaſure, and Virginity was gone, then it was accounted reaſonable, and indeed neceſſary, that the Party her ſelf ſhould receive mony for her better ſupport, and then ſhe muſt be at the coſt of her own dyet; and this was my cauſe: And my Companion and Bedfellow, who had bin in this condition for ſome time, and had paſſed, as I now did, for a private Lady a Merchants wife, and ſeveral other Titles and qualities, was now grown ſo common, and her face was ſo well known to all our *Madona's* better ſort of cuſtomers, that ſhe would ſerve no longer in that degree; but muſt go a ſtep lower; and go home to our *Madona's* own houſe, and there ſerve in common, for all Gentleman cuſtomers that came.

Thus as I was removed one ſtep lower then I was, ſo was ſhe, and it was not long ere I had a pretty young thing brought to be my companion: and though her Virginity had bin parted with above a twelve moneth before, (as ſhe confeſſed to me) yet ſhe was to ſucceed me, in my place, and act the part of a Virgin as I had done.

I now began to bethink my ſelf of what I had bin, and what more I was to be, and run through: I found that I was already at the ſecond degree, and that in ſhort time, I muſt follow my late companion to the third, and be enforced to go home to our *Madona's* houſe, and there proſtitute my ſelf to every drunken fellow that brought mony in his hand; to be ſlabbered, tumbled and toſſed, as he pleaſed: this I ſay went againſt my ſtomack, & I was much troubled at it; nay, I ſaw that ſome who had bin in as high a place and degree as my ſelf, were in bad condition enough; for there was one, who was my late companions bedfellow before I came, and was at that time called into the houſe to make room for me, this woman being very frolick, and withal negligent of our *Madona's* commands: which were to Sweat, Bath, and Purge, and uſe other remedies, to drive away all diſtempers; ſhe I ſay being negligent, & wanton, and keeping an open ſtable for all Horſes, gave entertainment to a running Nag, which ſo paid her that ſhe was ſoundly pepper'd, not with a Horſe Pox, but as bad, or a worſe diſeaſe: which ſtuck to her ſo ſoundly, that notwithſtanding our *Madona's* diligence, ſhe was fain to go under the Surgeons hands. Nay, and thoſe that did Eſcape this, were in time put to bad offices, as to at-

tend the reſt, and when their money was gone, they ſerved the Grooms, and Skip-kennels that attended their Maſters to our houſe.

Theſe conſiderations, I ſay, made me think of a remedy to take in time; and therefore I was reſolved to order my matters ſo, as never to come into our *Madona's* houſe but provide for my ſelf before it ſhould come to that point; and therefore I purpoſed to accept of the offers of the next good cuſtomer that came, that would take me from the condition I was in, and to provide for me; for it was a uſual thing, that we had many offers by ſeveral perſons to take us away; and keep and maintain us privately.

I had now every day more variety of ſervants, then formerly; for now I had done trafficking for my Maidenhead, I was more free and open, and to be courted and treated at a cheaper rate; and now I was at my own diſpoſe, whereas before I was ſtill watched by our *Madona*, or my Companion, who had it in charge from her, to give an account of all my actions; and the ſame charge had I given me over my new-come Bedfellow. All that was expected from me, was always to be ready at my Lodging, to come when ſent for; but I had this in general, and ſo had all the reſt of our Companions, not to permit any man to exceed kiſſing and feeling, till 3 or 4 Bottles of Wine were firſt drank.

Theſe, and many other Maxims we were inſtructed in, which I ſhal omit, and only give you an account of two or three frolicks I was a party

in, whilſt I profeſſed this quality, and ſo conclude.

Among other Servants, or Sweethearts, that I had, who were my conſtant cuſtomers, I had one, a young Country Gentleman; who being heir of a good eſtate, was brought up to *London*, and placed in one of the Inns of Court; but inſtead of ſtudying Law, he applyed him ſelf to a more ſoft and effeminate ſtudy: the Art of love and courtſhip: he had read *Ovid's Arte amandi*, at home in the Country, and could repeat many lines out of it; and he had read ſome other pieces of *Poetry*; but his fancy was not drawn to the height, till he had not only read ſome Comedies, but alſo ſeen them acted; and then he was ſo taken with them, that he ſpent his time commonly, every afternoon, in ſeeing one acted: he being a gueſt at our houſe (being introduced thither by one of our Hectors) and his pockets being very well lined with crowns, our *Matrona* thought me a fit Miſtris for him; and he being a handſome young fellow, I willingly accepted him for my ſervant: he being as (I told you) well skilled in *Ovids Art of Love*, would often make uſe of ſeveral of his expreſſions, to perſwade me to his embraces.

Though he needed not uſe theſe arguments to induce me to permit him to enjoy me: yet I was well enough pleaſed to hear his Poetry; and I being no Novice in the ſchool of love, did withſtand him, knowing that the mind is moſt eagerly bent on that which is forbidden; and therefore, like a torrent, it overflows, and becomes more impetuous by oppoſition; and I had read ſo much Poetry as to remember, that,

She that is willing to love me;
To her unwilling will I be
And,
Proffer'd pleaſures I defy,
Give me her that doth deny.

He making uſe of his Poetry, made me think of mine; and therefore I was the more coy to him; but ſtill held him in hand, and gave him certain hopes of an abſolute injoyment; This his vayne of Poetry was not only pleaſant to me, but profitable; and he fell into one of the fineſt humors that I have heard of; for I attending him to the Play-houſes very frequently, we one day ſaw a Play called *Philaſter*, or *Love lyes a bleeding:* The Play being done, we went to a Tavern, and there he highly commended the action, but above all things the womens parts: he was very much pleaſed with *Arethuſa's* conſtancy and love to *Philaſter:* but that which tickled him moſt, was *Megera's* acceptance of *Pharamon's* Courtſhip; for though ſhe were a great Court-Lady, yet ſhe accepted his gold which he preſented her, and was ſo kind as to attend his pleaſure in his lodging. Now ſaid he to me, though I have tendred you my ſervice, and am willing to make you a preſent of all I have, yet I cannot induce you be ſo kind to me.

I now, hearing him at this point, was reſolved to accept him & his preſent, (for, though he had been ſome days in my company, yet he had beſtow'd nothing conſiderable upon me) & therefore I told him, that it was true, the Lady *Megera* did accommodate Prince *Pharamond:* but

he did firſt prefent her with ſomwhat that was conſiderable, to induce her to it; and though I had a very great reſpect for his love, yet there was ſomewhat more then love to be tendred, as he might now very well underſtand by this late paſſage.

My yonker (who I ſuppofe had never tafted woman, but with his Mothers Chamber-Maids, or ſome ſuch Creatures, knew not what belonged to Women of my profeſſion) being now awakened, as it were, out of a dead fleep; quickly drew 5 pieces of Gold out of his Pocket, and made a prefent of them: You may be ſure I was not coy, nor cautious in receiving them; but quickly put them up; and, for the prefent, thanks was all I returned, delaying him in his defires, till we came to our *Madona's* quarters; where we had a plentiful Supper: And I having now acquainted her how I had dealt with my Young man; it was thought reaſonable that he ſhould have a nights lodging for his Money; neither did I refufe it, but agreed to all he asked me, and I ſo well pleafed him, that I perſwaded him out of a Diamond Ring worth 5 l. more.

I am the more particular in my relation, of my acquaintance with him: and the means of our clofing, by ſeing a Play, becaufe of the advantages I gained on him afterwards by the ſame occaſion: for the next day we again going to ſee a Play, it happened that it was the *Siege* of *Rhodes*, and then he was as much taken with *Roxolana*, as he had formerly been with *Arethufa*, and highly commended that part: I perceiving his fancy, told him, that I fuppofed he would be very glad to

imbrace *Roxolana* in his Arms; Yes ſaid he, that I would, though it were at the expence of 20*l.* well ſaid I, give me the money, and I will ſo order the matter, that you ſhall receive that ſatisfaction; nay ſaid he, but I doubt you will be offended thereat; no ſaid I, it will be as much to my content, as yours. He hearing this, without any difficulty, agreed to give me 20*l.* which was ſent me that evening, I told him the next day, that in one weeks time, he ſhould receive the content he expected, and to heighten his expectation, I refuſed to let him lye with me in the mean time.

In this weeks time I ſo ordered the matter, that I got a Taylor, and other perſons who were uſed to make the habits for the Players, to make me a habit in all things like to that of *Roxolana;* this being done, I acquainted my young Gentleman, and told him that for his better ſatisfaction, he ſhould ſee the ſo famed *Princeſs* at our quarters, where he might have more freedom, then at any other place; he was herewith very well contented; he habiting himſelf in the richeſt garbs he had, and a large Colation was provided to treat his expected Miſtreſs; all things being thus fitted on his part; I put on the provided habit: and inſtead of his expected *Roxolana*, entred the room where he was: I was attended by two or three, who bore up my train, and had ſet my ſelf out with ſo many Jewels, both good & counterfeit: and was indeed in all things ſo like the *Roxolana* he had ſeen, that he doubted not but I was the very ſame and was much ſurprized at the matter; and although my face was as lovely as hers, yet I had added ſomewhat thereto to appear more beautiful.

Our *Matrona* ſeeing him ſomewhat amazed, went to him, and rouzing him up, asked him, why he did not ſalute me; for ſaid ſhe, though her habit is not *Engliſh*, yet you ſee ſhe is of this Country, and will admit of the ordinary ſalutes. He being now quickned up, approached me, and gave me the ordinary ſalutations, which I accepted, and at his requeſt I ſate down by him. Well, ſaid our *Matrona*, hath not Mrs. *Mary* performed her promiſe with you. Yes, ſaid he, to admiration: and if before I deſired this Ladies Company at the firſt view; I am now much more pleaſed than I expected; and as I have a very great eſteem for this Lady, and intend to continue it, yet that ſhall be no prejudice to Mrs. *Mary*, whoſe great love and kindneſs to me in this particular action, I ſhall always remember, and largely requite: Well Sir, ſaid I, and what love you beſtow on her ſhall be very acceptable to me, and I ſhall indeavour to retalliat the ſame.

My young man had not till now heard me ſpeak, and, though he did, he could not diſtinguiſh me by my voice, ſo great a difference was there in my habit, from my ordinary dreſs, that he did not ſo much as ſuſpect it, but, hearing me ſpeak with ſo much affection for Miſtris *Mary*; he replyed; that ſince I was ſo much a friend to her, he was the better ſatisfyed in what he had deſired; and, he wanted nothing to content him, ſo much, as her preſence. Well, ſaid our *Matrona*, if that be all, you may have that ſatisfaction quickly: nay, and you have it already; for ſhe is in this Room: He hearing her, looked earneſtly about; and though he gazed much in my face, yet he

could not diſcover me; but my greateſt buſineſs being now done, our *Matrona* could no longer forbear, but fell into a very great fit of laughter, and ſo did the reſt of the company; neither did this make him ſenſible of the matter, till our *Madona*, taking him by the hand, cauſed him to take me by mine; and told him, that if he deſired Miſtris *Maryes* company there, he had it; for ſhe was the ſame party with that Lady, and had only put on that habit to give him the content and ſatisfaction he deſired.

Although at firſt he could not credit what ſhe ſaid, yet looking again earneſtly upon me, he diſcovered the matter; and then he ſaid, *Ah Madam, I did not imagine that yon could be guilty of ſo pleaſing a fallacy; but I am very well ſatisfied therein, and am now more glad that you have found out this way to pleaſe me, than if I enjoyed the very party her ſelf.*

To this I anſwered, *That I hoped I ſhould as well ſatisfie his deſire in enjoying that* Princeſs *whom I repreſented, as if he had in his Company the ſame perſon who acted that part at the Theatre; for, ſaid I, it is only her habit that makes her appear ſo like a* Princeſs; *and I, being now in the ſame dreſs, may as well paſs as ſhe; and as for face, and other parts, I ſhall not give her any preheminence, neither, I hope, will you, if you look on me with an impartial eye.*

My friend was very well ſatisfyed in what I had done and ſaid, and now coming more near to me, we fell to our Collation with much freedom. I was attended by ſeveral whom I had appointed to that purpoſe, and demeaned my felf ſo Majeſtically, that as they all told me, I might very well

paſs for the very perſon whom I did repreſent; and my Gentleman was ſo extremely well pleaſed, that I thought he would have loſt his eyes in gazing at me. Our Collation being ended, I and my attendants danced, and ſpent much time in ſuch kind of divertiſements; but I ſaw that my friend was impatient till bed time came, that he might have me, his beloved *Princeſs*, in his arms: we were waited on with all manner of ſtate, and had Muſick attending us, not only all the time we were up, but alſo when we were in bed: they being placed in the Chamber adjoyning to our lodgings, where they played for two hours ſpace after we were retired.

The ſtrength of imagination was much, for as my bedfellow imagined that he had a *Princeſs* in his arms ſo I conceited my ſelf to be little leſs: great was the pleaſure, I received from, and gave to my bedfellow, for we were both in the flower of our age, he being about twenty, and I eighteen, we had both equal deſires, and thought of nothing but pleaſure: we baniſhed all other paſſions, to make way for that of love according to the Poet.

Fair Venus *never goes to Bed,*
To thoſe that are with ſorrows fed.

CHAP. XXXVII.

Her Friend being forced from her by his friends ſhe meeting with one of her old acquaintance, falls again to trading, till in the end, ſhe meets with the Drugſter, *who kept her for his private uſe.*

ALthough I was well enough pleaſed with my nights lodging, and ſo was my bedfellow: yet, as the longeſt day, ſo will the longeſt night have an end; and no pleaſure is laſting, neither would ours continue, for the morning being come we were again called up by Muſick, but being glutted with that, we ordered them to retire, and I firſt aroſe out of our bed and going to dreſs me in my ordinary habit, my bedfellow did forbid it, and intreated me to give him the ſatisfaction, and delight, to ſee me again in my Turkiſh dreſs. He having pleaſed me ſo well, I was contented to pleaſure him, in a requeſt that was ſo indifferent; and therefore dreſſed my ſelf accordingly.

He was ſo well pleaſed with me in every thing, that taking me in his arms, I remember he ſighed, and I demanding the reaſon of that paſſion, he told me, it was out of the extremity of the love he bore me: and which he deſired above all things to continue; Indeed I liked him ſo well, that I could have been well enough contented to have been his wife, and have left all the world for him, for he was of ſo eaſie a plyant nature,

that I could have wrought him to any thing: and therefore being deſirous to make uſe of that opportunity, I deſired him not to be melancholy, for all that I could ſerve him in, I ſhould readily do: he finding me ſo free with him, told me if that I would wait the death of his Mother, he would make me his wife, and in the mean time, would entertain me, & provide for me wholly as if I were ſo: but he durſt not marry me till his Mother was dead, ſhe having a great power over his eſtate, his Father who was lately dead, ſo ordering it; and beſide, he was not as yet of Age to demand it. I being deſirous to cloſe with him, (not only out of a deſire I had to leave that courſe of life I then led; but alſo out of Pure love I bore him,) ſoon agreed to be wholly diſpoſed by him, & deſired him therefore to be conſtant in his affection; and take ſome time to conſider how to diſpoſe of me, and I ſhould readily conſent to it, for he knew as well as I, that it would not at all be convenient for me to remain where I was. This was our diſcourſe, and then we went from our Chamber into another Room, where we were expected by our *Matrona*, and ſome others of my companions: the next day we alſo ſpent in frolicking and mirth; but the whole charge of it, was not born by my friend, for ſeveral of our *Matrona's* Friends and Clients did participate in the coſt: as well as the mirth, which was very high, and laſted all the day and night; and then tyred, though not ſatisfied with ſuch delights as *Bacchus* and *Venus* could afford: we (having imitated the Empreſs *Meſſalina* in our debauchery; of whom the Poet ſaith.

The Imperial Strumpet, with one maid ſtole out,
In her night hoods, and having caſt about:
Her black hair, a red Perriwig ſhe got,
Into the ſtewes——
There many thirſted for encounters tryed
Departed tyr'd with men, not ſatisfied.

This frolick being at an end, I and my friend began to be ferious, and in ſhort time after he provided me a private lodging, and I making up my pack of cloths, Jewels and Mony which I had gained, and which was conſiderable, left our *Madona* and now retired my felf, and reſolved to be very honeſt, and abſolutely conſtant to my friend: who continued his love to me in a very great meafure.

But at length all the moneys that he brought to Town with him, and all elſe that he could get or procure, was ſpent; (for he had not ſpared any thing I deſired to content me,) and which was worſe, his Mother came to Town to viſit him, and upon examination he could give little account, how he had ſpent his time and monyes; wherefore it being concluded that ill company was the cauſe, his Mother laid out very diligently to diſcover what company he kept: though he abſtained from coming ſo often to me, as formerly, Yet, he either ſent, or came to me every day: that he might not be abſolutly out of favor with his Mother, I furniſhed him with what ready mony I had, and he in requital, promifed me a continuance of his love, & a retalliation of my kindneſs, & which was more then all, he engaged to marry me (notwithſtanding all the oppoſitions his mother or friends could make,) if I would ſtay till

he was of age, and had his eſtate in his hands; I had this promiſe from him, not only by word of mouth, but alſo by writing; but all theſe promiſes were quickly vacuated and void; for his mother, by her extraordinary diligence found out his haunts, and diſcovered his coming to me; and followed the tract of my actions, and life; that ſhe found from whence I came, and who I was; and then ſoon concluded, that I had been the chief occaſion of his miſpending his time, and moneys; and now ſhe muſtred up all her wits, to prevent his ruine: which ſhe ſuppoſed would be inevitable, if he continued any longer a correſpondency with me.

To this end ſhe called her Son before her, and examined him in the preſence of all thoſe of his Relations and friends which were then in Town. She laid the buſineſs ſo plain, and home to him, that he could not deny the matter, ſomewhat of the manner he did; for whereas ſhe reported me an abſolute *Proſtitute*, he alleged me *virtuous* and *modeſt*, as indeed well he might (for I had, ere ſince my firſt acquaintance with him, been conſtant to him) but it being proved from whence I came, and how immodeſt I had lived, it was ſufficient argument to make out what I was, and that I could not be a fit Wife for him: She was a very diſcreet Woman, and one who had known the World, and I ſuppoſe was well enough acquainted with that ſaying of the *Poet*.

If Modeſty and Women once do ſever,
Farewel their name, farewel their fame for ever.

And therefore it being evident enough what I had been, ſhe from thence concluded what I would be: In fine, ſhe ſo ſcooled her ſon, and ordered the

matter, that he was contented to relinquiſh my company; and becauſe, ſhe would be ſure he ſhould doe ſo, ſhe never left, till ſhe had got him in the mind to travel: and ſo putting him in an equipage befitting his quality, ſhe ſent him for *France.*

Thus, when I thought my ſelf near the greateſt happineſs I ever yet arrived to: (which I earneſtly hoped, and expected, by being married to this young Gentleman) was I ſtripped of all joy, and comfort, in his ſuddain and abſolute departure from me; his Mother, and Friends, were ſo ſtrict with him, that they would not permit him, to take his farewel of me; I only received a ſhort letter from him, wherein, he complained of his ill fortune, in being thus forced from me: but more eſpecially at the manner of it; for he had not the opportunity, nor power to be civil to me, in reimburſing me, with the moneys I had lately furniſhed him with; for his Mother gave him no more ready moneys, then he ſhould have preſent occaſion for; promiſing him, to ſupply him with more by Bills of Exchange, when he ſhould arrive at the place he was deſigned for; and then he promiſed that I ſhould hear further from him.

This was the ſubſtance of his letter; and indeed I could not well complain of him; for what moneys he had lately received of me had formerly been his own; but I was now reduced to a very bad, and low condition: having no ready money, ſo that I was forced to ſell ſome of my Jewels; and for a while ſupplyed my occaſions, with the moneys they yielded me; I living a very ſolitary, and retired life; and all my pleaſure was in reading Playes, and Romances: in which I ſpent much time, and took great delight; I waited long in

expectation of letters from my friend, according to his promiſe; but whether he ſent, and they were intercepted, or how: or whether he forgot me, or no, I know not; for I never after that heard of him.

Being ſomewhat weary with this ſolitary life; and finding no effects, of my friends promiſe to ſend to me; I began to conſider, what courſe I was to take; I was very unwilling to viſit my old *Matrona* again; but one day, walking out, I was met by one of my old ſweethearts: one of thoſe whom I had known in her houſe; but I ſaw by his habit, and afterwards by the ſtrength of his Pocket, that he was but in a low condition, and was more ready to receive, than give; he faſtned on me for old acquaintance ſake, I was forced to drink with him; but he ingeniouſly told me, that *Hector* was not in Field, he had no money in his Pocket; wherefore I (though money was not very fluſh with me, as having had a long time of vacation:) not only paid our reckoning: but at his intreaty, doubly hors'd him, by lending him, (or I may rather ſay giving him) two half crowns.

This put him in ſtock and heart, and he gratefully acknowledged my civility, telling me he would requite it, and talking of thouſands he was to receive. He was very earneſt to know my Lodging, but I concealed that place from him, and, as I thought, parted from him warily enough, and went many ways about before I went home; but he dog'd me, and ſeeing me hous'd, waited, leſt that might not be the place; but after a ſufficient ſtay he was better ſatisfied; for I came no more out, and ſo he went to his Quarters.

This my old acquaintance, as he had formerly been bit, and had others lived upon him, ſo now

he only lived upon others; and though it was not above a twelve month ſince he was very gallant, and ſpent very highly with me, yet he had made haſt and conſumed above 3000*l.* he was young enough, and as wanton and deſirous as ever of my Company; but he knew very well I would not conſent, unleſs there were money in the caſe; he being deſtitute of that neceſſary commodity, therefore ſought out for one who was better ſupply'd with it; he needed not to look long, neither did he, till he found one, who was now, as not long ſince he had been, better ſtor'd with mony than wit, and as deſirous of pleaſure, being willing to purchaſe it at any rate; him he tells of a rare purchaſe, a Lady whom he had the happineſs, to be acquainted with, that was rarely handſome, of an excellent good nature, and he queſtioned not but ſhe might be flexible. The monyed Gallant did not ask many queſtions, but deſired by all means to ſee this celebrated beauty; for he doubted not but ſhe muſt needs be handſom, whom the other ſo cried up for beautiful. My old acquaintance was as willing as he to attend him to this Lady, which was my ſelf; and therefore to me they came, and believing that Confidence was the beſt way of ſpeaking with me; he boldly asked to ſee and ſpeak with me; pretending great buſineſs, not ſo much as queſtioning whither I lived there or no. The people of the houſe believing him one of my intimate acquaintance, directly brought him and his friend up into my Chamber.

I was ſomewhat ſurpriz'd at the ſight of him; but after the firſt ſalutes he took me to one ſide, and privately told me all his deſign; and that

this party whom he had brought, was a very well-money'd man, & much might be ſqueez'd out of him. Although I was not yet reſolved to fall to my old trade, yet now he was come, I knew not how to put him off, wherefore I indifferently entertained, and I may very well ſay indifferently: becauſe, I was yet cold in my deſires, and had very little appetite, however ſome bottles of Wine being ſent for, we drank them off: and my young Gentleman being warm in his gears, began to talk a little boldly, but it was to no purpoſe, for I forbid all actions, and at that time he only purchaſed a kiſs, but (that I may draw to a period to my diſcourſe,) I did not long continue ſo cold to him, for he bringing meat in his mouth, good ſtore of Gold in his pocket, which he willingly and freely gave me, I permitted him to take all the pleaſure he could receive by me.

Thus did I renue my old trade, and my old friend, who had brought this new acquaintance, finding ſome benefit and profit in the caſe; for he had money of his acquaintance, whom he had brought, as alſo of me, neither could I at convenient times, deny him the pleaſure he had formerly taſted with me; he, I ſay, having both pleaſure and profit, turned Broaker for me, and brought me ſeveral Merchants, who traffiqued with me for pleaſure: which I commonly afforded them a good pennyworth, though ſometimes a dear one, for I would not deal with every ordinary fellow, and therefore was paid the better, by thoſe who were my cuſtomers.

But let me do what I could, I ſaved little or nothing at the months end, (years I will not ſay, becauſe I was weary of this trade in ſix months time:) for I now had not

only my ſelf, but this my old acquaintance, tance and new Broker to provide for; For he finding that moſt of my profit, came in by thoſe he brought me, would be very bold in demanding a ſhare with me: and his expences were ſo high, which he pretended, was only to bring me of the better ſort of cuſtomers, that I was now poorer then ever, and he now became ſo impudent, that he would not only command my money, but my Rings, and other Jewels, which he would ſell or pawn as he liſted; and indeed it is the fortune, or misfortune, of all thoſe of our Quality, to be troubled with ſome ſuch fellows, hangers on as theſe, or elſe we ſhould or might in little time gain ſufficient eſtates; but as I ſay commonly, what we got one way, theſe followers ſpend the other, ſo that at length all that we are likely to purchaſe, if we have not a great care, is only a diſcaſe, which may ſtick long enough by us. I being fearful of this, for my Friend or Hector, I may call him both, was now grown ſo intemperate, that he kept all companies: and if I refuſed him money, or a nights lodging, he would go to any other common woman, the firſt he met withal, and ſo afterwards comming to me, I might be ſpoiled; to prevent this, I privately left my lodging, and hearing of two of my own ſex, and quality, that were going a progreſs into the Country, to take a frollick, I made the third, and had a man as well as they to attend me; and as I expected, to bear my charges; but we all reckoned without our hoſt, for we were baſely trappand, by thoſe who went with us, and left in pawn for a reckoning that was conſiderable; we were in a ſtrange place, many miles from *London*, and much diſtreſſed, but at length a reſolution was taken, that one of us ſhould go to

London, and fetch money to redeem the reſt, it fell to the lot of one of my companions, who being on her Journey, had the good luck to meet with honeſt *Gregory*, our now companion, and he very liberally relieved us, by ſending mony to us, whereby we had the freedom to come to our companion, and him, who attended us. She being come to this part of her Relation, I told her, that I heard it already by *Gregory*, who among other paſſages of his life, acquainted me with that.

Well then replyed ſhe, if you know that account, I have little more to acquaint you with, for not long after my arrival in *London*, I fortunately met with my honeſt friend the *Drugſter*, and he liking me for a Miſtreſs, and I him for a ſervant or Maſter which you pleaſe, agreed to obey his pleaſures, he providing for me, which he hath hitherto done in a very plentiful manner: and I on the other ſide, have bin as conſtant and obedient to him.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

Miſtreſs Mary *having finiſhed*, *Miſtreſs* Dorothy *begins her ſtory, wherein ſhe relates, that having left her friends in the Country, ſhe comes to* London, *and entring to ſervice, lyes with* 3 *ſeveral men, by whom ſhe was got with Child, and ſo orders the matter, that all* 3 *pay well for it.*

I had given very great attention to Mrs. *Maries* ſtory, and Mrs. *Dorothy* (who, with me, had been the only Auditor) told her, that ſhe had received a great deal of fatisfaction; for, ſaid ſhe, though I have formerly heard many of your particular actions, yet I never received a perfect account till now. Nay, ſaid Mrs. *Mary*, this account is far from be-

ing perfect, and is only ſuch paſſages as I could at preſent call to mind; but indeed they are the moſt remarkable, and by them you may gueſs at the reſt.

I was very well pleaſed with what I had heard, and being likewiſe deſirous to be acquainted with the adventures of Mrs. *Dorothy* requeſted her to relate them to me, which ſhe did as ſolloweth.

Old friend (ſaid ſhe to me) you have great occaſion to love and reſpect me, for the great love I have born to you, and your memory; for after your departure from my Fathers houſe, I was very much afflicted for your abſence, and I did believe that you intended marriage to me, as you proteſted; and though my Father and Mother had often doubted of the reallity of your intentions, eſpecially, after you had ſo unworthily left me, yet I ſtill perſwaded them that you would return. You know well enough, that my Father was not ignorant of our privacy, he having ſurprized us in the manner, and you then promiſed to make me amends by marriage; but all the ſatisfaction I received was a Copy of Verſes, and 20 pieces of Gold: In the one you expreſſed your Wit, in the other your Generoſity, for I very well knew that you might have omitted both, and not have ſent either; but I ſuppoſe, you were more skilful than I, and knew that I was with Child by you, and therefore ſent that mony to defray the charge I ſhould be at on that occaſion. This piece of civility of yours did put me into good hopes, that you would return; and I accordingly perſwaded my Father, and Mother; but time convinced me of my error: and alſo made it more apparent that I had been ſporting with you; for my Belly ſwelled ſo, that my Mo-

ther ſoon reſolved me that I was with Child by you.

I was very melancholly upon this occaſion, but my Mother indeavoured to comfort me (for I being her only Child) ſhe had a great deal of love for me; and knowing what was paſs'd could not be helped, ſhe took order to conceal and keep the knowledge of my misfortune from being publiquely known and diſcourſed of; Wherefore I, at her deſire and directions, kept within doors, pretending a ſickneſs, which indeed was not wholly counterfeit, in regard I much grieved for your abſence. In this condition I ſpent my time, till the time of my deliverance from Childbearing came, and then I was brought to bed of a Boy, which was no ſooner born, but it was taken and carried from me, to a Town three miles off, to be nurſed by a woman, whom my Mother had for that purpoſe provided; and this was done to conceal the ſhame that I ſhould or might ſuſtain, if it were known that I had a Child, without knowing who, or at leaſt, where was the Father.

So ſoon as a Month was expired, I went to ſee the Child, the ſight of which put me too much in mind of the Father; and I was then again ſenſibly afflicted, at his abſence; methoughts in that infancy there was ſo much reſemblance of my beloved deceiver, that I kiſs'd the Infant not only for its own, but for the Fathers ſake. I then returned home agen, and now after ſo long a time of retirement, I began to recover, not only my ſtrength, but ſome additions to my beauty; ſo that I having had 2 or 3 Suitors, when a Maid, who had ſorborn viſiting me

by occaſion of my ilneſs, they now agen renew their ſuits; but if I had ſome diſlike for them before, now I could not endure them in my company, they were ſuch abſolute Hobbinolls. Though I was not ſatisfied in their frequent viſits, yet my Father and Mother preſs'd me, not only to accept them, but alſo their ſuit, and make choice of one of them for a husband, alleging, that you would never return; and it would be not only ſafe but neceſſary, in time to beſtow my ſelf. This diſcourſe did much diſturb me, and I was ſo often troubled with my ſuiters, and diſturbed and vexed by my Father and Mothers importunity, that I reſolved to quit both, by leaving them, and therefore purpoſed to go to *London*, that I might not be troubled with the importunity of my Father and Mother; nor the troubleſome viſits of my ſweethearts.

In perſuance of this reſolve, I fitted my ſelf with all neceſſaries; and that I might not wholly diſtract my Parents by my thus leaving them, I writ a Letter of excuſe, & left it for them; & ſo walking to the next great Town, attending the coming by of the Paſſage Coach, and in that got me a place to ride to *London*.

I continued for ſome time in the Inne where the Coachman ſet me down, and the reſt of his Paſſengers; but knowing it would be impoſſible for me to continue long there, I gained acquaintance with the Maid of the houſe, and told my tale to her as well as I thought convenient. She underſtanding that I was willing to ſerve, and wanted a place; and I acquainting her with my abilities, as that I could ſew, waſh, and ſtarch, and do moſt neceſſary things required of a ſer-

vant, She ſoon procured me a Place in a houſe that entertained many Lodgers. I ſpent a quarter of a years time very privately and honeſtly in this ſervice; but then our houſe being full of Lodgers, one of them caſt a wanton eye on me, and being well pleaſed with my face, began to court me very familiarly; although at firſt I oppoſed him, and gave him nothing but ſlights and denials, yet he ſo managed his buſineſs by Preſents which he gave me, and making uſe of all other opportunities that he gained his will of me, and I again entred the Liſts in a loving Combate. He took many opportunities for enjoyment, not only in the day time, but ſometimes we ſpent whole nights in our amorous ſports; and though my Mr. and Mrs. did not diſcover any thing of the matter, yet another Gentleman, who was alſo a Lodger, and lay in the next Chamber to my friends, watching me, found out my haunt; and therefore he (being as amorous as the other) was deſirous of ſport, became a Suiter to me upon the ſame account. I abſolutely denied him, for I thought it was enough to have to do with one man, and was reſolved to venture my ſelf no further; but he taking the opportunity of the others abſence, firſt treated me with Wine, then preſented me with a Ring; but all this would not do, till he in plain terms told me, that he knew very well I was not ſo hard-hearted to every one; for were Mr. ſuch a one, naming my friend, there, I would not deny him the curteſie: I at firſt made ſtrange of this ſtory, and deny'd it, but he falling into plain terms with me, and telling me that he had watched me ſuch a night, when

I lay with him, I could not then deny it, neither did I long deny or refuſe him what he deſired; ſo that he likewiſe took his pleaſure with me; and having obtained his deſire at that time, he made bold with me ſo often as he lifted, when the other was out of the way.

I had now two Bedfellows, ſo that I could ſeldom lie alone, one of them would ſtill beſpeak me; but the firſt of them did not know of the 2d. though he knew very well of the other: Though I had ſport enough with theſe two, yet it was not long ere a third man likewiſe put in for a ſhare with them, and that was my Maſters brother; he was a very pretty young man, and one whom I could well enough love for a Husband; but he looked a little higher than to marry a Servant-maid: but as a Miſtreſs he courted me. Many attempts he made in vain; but time that bringeth every thing to paſs, made me flexible, and I likewiſe gave him poſſeſſion of the thing he deſired: he took much pleaſure in my company, and very reſpectful to me, often preſenting me with Linnen and Laces, and ſometimes a Crown or an Angel came from his Pocket, as well as from the other two, who well fed me with mony, which I ſtill pocketed up: but as I got mony, ſo again I got ſomewhat elſe, a great Belly, and which was the worſt of my three friends, I knew not which was the Father; but if I am not miſtaken, I believe it was my Maſters Brother.

But I was reſolved the other two ſhould help to Father it, or elſe pay for it; and therefore I ſoon told them all three, as they had occaſion to deal with me, in what condition I was. My firſt

and oldeſt friend was moſt troubled at it, being as he thought the moſt concerned, becauſe he knew not of any elſe that had to do with me; he was ſomewhat ſtartled at it, leſt, as he ſaid, his wife ſhould come to know it; for, he was a married man: and although his wife ſometimes came to Town, and would lie with him; yet he would ſometimes before he went to bed to her, take his opportunity to have his pleaſure with me; He, I ſay was troubled at the news: but that did not hinder us, in our purpoſed nights lodging, only in the intervals we conſidered what courſe to take; at length it was reſolved, that he would provide for me, the time of my lying Inn, and afterwards for the child; and in earneſt of the charge, he ſoon gave me 20*l.* to provide me with neceſſaryes. I having now done with my firſt cuſtomer, was reſolved to get ſomething out of my 2d: but he ſtill gave me the hearing, preſuming on his knowledge of my having to do with the firſt; yet, he would not on this occaſion, advance any thing, intending to ſhirk off, becauſe no body knew what trade we did drive together.

I perceiving his intention; was reſolved to be even with him, and it may be out-wit him; and that he might not diſtruſt me, I ſeemed no ways diſſatisfied, but gave him as much freedom with me, as ever; but to carry on my deſign, I thought good to break the buſineſs to my Maſters Brother; wherefore, I likewiſe acquainted him with my condition, and told him in plain terms, that I was with child by him; He could not deny the fact, nor make any excuſe; not knowing of my dealings with the other two; But he was

likewiſe very much ſurprized; But I doubting, he might put me off; I took the opportunity of telling him this news, when we were in bed together, knowing there I ſhould have time, and conveniency to diſcourſe it.

He knew not what to ſay, and indeed was very cold with me; and I was forced to help him out, for he was then a Suiter to a young Gentlewoman, and was fearful that this buſineſs would hinder his fortunes; and though he loved me well enough, yet he was unwilling to marry me: for that would prove ſo diſadvantagious to him: he ſuppoſing that nothing but marriage would content me, was much troubled, and could not tell what anſwer to give me: wherefore I was forced to break ſilence, and told him, that as I loved him, ſo I would ſhew him ſufficient proofs of it; for I would not that my love ſhould ruine him, as I knew it would, if the world ſhould know what had paſſed between us; and though nothing could ſatisfie me but marriage; yet I could be content to wave that, and propoſe ſomewhat elſe of ſatisfaction; nay then, ſaid he, if you will be ſo kind to me, propoſe your own terms, and take them; I hearing him thus generous, it was not long ere we concluded upon terms; which were theſe, that he would give me 20*l.* down to bear my charges in the time of my Lying-in, and if the child lived, he would give 50*l.* more to any perſon whom I would appoint to take the child, and provide for it; theſe terms I was well enough ſatisfied with, only I conſidering that he would hear of my lying with the other, becauſe I intended to diſcover that to him, and have his aſſiſtance therein, and then I doubted he would ſuſpect me, and it may be re-

fuſe to pay the 50*l.* when due; therefore I was reſolved to have him ſeal a Bond to me, for payment of it: and I urged him to do it out of this conſideration, that he was to be married: and though he now loved me well-enough, yet when he had a Wife, he would happily ſlight and forget me, and ſo refuſe or neglect to pay it. He was content to hear my arguments: and though alwayes proteſting a continuance of his love to me, notwithſtanding all the Wives in the World; yet he conſented to give me Bond according to my deſire.

Thus every thing being agreed on, we again renewed our pleaſures, and ſpent that night, as we had done many before. But morning being come, I aroſe, and ſo managed my affairs, that I that day had a Bond Sealed to me for payment of 50*l.* to be paid in 6 months; I alſo within few dayes received of him the 20*l.* he had promiſed me.

Thus did I order my matters with my firſt and laſt Cuſtomers, and I gave them their wonted ſatisfaction of Lying with me ſo often as they pleaſed; and ſo I did to the other my middle Cuſtomer; but do what I could, I could not bring him to any conſiderable Compoſition; and though he were the beſt able, yet he offered me the leaſt, and intended to come off with a trifle; however I gave him his wonted freedom with me, but purpoſed ere long to be even with him, as I was.

For one night being in bed with my Maſters Brother; I having very well pleaſed him, he talked of his little *Hans in Kelder*, the Boy in my belly, wiſhing very well to it, not in the leaſt doubting but it was of his own begetting, and

uſing many words to that purpoſe: well Sir, ſaid I, it is very true, it is yours, but if I would have been as free with others, as I have been with you, it might have had more, if not another Father; and thereupon I proceeded, and told him how that I had been often importuned by Mr. ſuch a one, his Brothers Lodger, and my 2d. Bedſellow. Well replyed he, I am the more beholding to you, that you have accepted of me rather than him; but though I am not at all dis-ſatisfied in what I have done, I wiſh he had been the Father, for your ſake as well as mine, for you may compel him to marriage, or elſe get a conſiderable ſum of money from him. As for marriage, ſaid I, I doubt I ſhould hardly draw him to it, but ſome monies I might get of him, and would yet, if you will but conſent to it, and aſſiſt me therein. To this he anſwered, that in any thing I ſhould deſire, he would not be wanting, and therefore he bid me propound the way, and he would not fail in his aſſiſtance: I then told him, that I knew but one way to do it, and in that I muſt play the diſloyal wag with him, to do that which I had no mind: for that matter, ſaid he, you ſhall have my conſent, and I think I gueſs at your meaning, which is, that you muſt agree to let him ly with you; wherefore ſince it will be ſo advantagious to you, let him do it; for I am ſure he can do me no great wrong, for notwithſtanding what he can do, the Child will be all mine, of my own getting.

He being ſo free to it, and agreeing to all things according to my deſire, we reſolved that I ſhould permit my ſecond Sweetheart to ly with me; but I ſhould ſo order the matter, that he

ſhould take us in the manner, and then we would agree to act the reſt very well. I now having laid my plot very well, and orderly, I appointed my time when I would ly with him and agreed to leave the Chamber door open, that he, riſing early the next morning, might (pretending ſome buſineſs) enter the Chamber, and find us in Bed together. Our plot being thus laid, and my *2d.* Sweetheart deſiring it, I promiſed to come to bed to him about midnight, which I did; but my Maſters brother knowing of my deſign, was reſolved to have the firſt carving of me, and that he ſhould only have a butter'd Bun; and therefore cauſed me to ly with him all the former part of the night; but midnight being paſt, he permitted me to proceed in my adventure. I was expected by my Bedfellow, and accordingly entertained; but I minding the deſign I was about, awaked early in the morning, and ſo ordered the matter, that my Bedfellow likewiſe threw off his drowſineſs to encounter with me in our nocturnal paſtime, which when he had done, I began to diſcourſe him, reaſoning the cauſe with him, and deſiring him to reſolve me what he would do for me in that condition I was, and what proviſion he would make for me. He gave me indifferent anſwers, and I grew paſſionate with him, and on a ſudden the Chamber door opened, and my Maſters Brother entred the room. I I ſeeing this, left off ſpeaking, and crouded my ſelf cloſe down into the bed, as if pretending to hide my ſelf; but he coming boldly on, bid my Bedfellow Good morrow, and asking him a queſtion, came nearer the Bed ſide, and drawing the Curtains, ſaid, what have you a Bedfellow? No

ſaid he, not I; ſurely ſaid the other you have, for I am miſtaken if I did not hear ſome other tongue than yours; the other deny'd it, but he knowing well enough what he had to do, ſoon found out where my Petticoats lay: *How*, ſaid he, *ſurely you have a Bedfellow, and that a female one;* the other being thus ſurprized, knew not what to ſay: Wherefore my Mr. Brother proceeding, ſaid, *ſurely I ſhould know theſe Coats, for, if I am not miſtaken, they are our Maid* Dorothys. I finding my ſelf diſcovered, now appeared, and in the firſt place beg'd his pardon, and *that he would not acquaint my Mr. and Mrs. with it.* He ſeeming very angry ſoundly rated me and my Bedfellow, and ſaid he, *this is not the firſt time that you two have lain together, for I have long ſuſpected you, and have watched you. Truly Sir*, ſaid I, *it is true this Gentleman hath long known me, but I pray you make no more words of it at preſent, and for modeſties ſake leave the Chamber, and I will anon ſatisfie you further in every particular.* My Bedfellow likewiſe requeſting the ſame, he very civilly left us, ſhutting the Chamber door after him. My Bedfellow was much ſurprized at this ſudden accident, and I ſeemed to be ſo; and quickly getting my cloaths, aroſe and left him, retiring into my own Chamber, leaving him to conſider it.

I having now done my buſineſs, by having a witneſs of my lying with him, was bold with him, to know what I ſhould do in the caſe; *for* ſaid I, *my Maſters Brother will certainly acquaint my Mr. and Mrs. with our actions, and then I muſt leave the houſe, and whither to go, I know not, nor who will entertain me.* He argued that

the other, my first Sweetheart, must provide for me; to this I told him, *that I believed that he would do somewhat for me, but he had a Wife, and could not do what he listed, whereas he on the contrary was a single man, and rich enough;* and he still endeavouring to put me off, and lay all upon the first; I in plain terms told him, *that if he continued to say so, I would wholly deny my dealings with the other, and though he should avouch it, yet he would not be believed, he being himself a party guilty, as could be proved by my Masters Brother; and therefore it would be judged by all, that he, and he alone, was the Father of the Child, and would be forced to marry me, or at least provide for me and the Child.* I having told him my resolution, left him to consider of it, and then my Masters Brother came to him, and he and I together so ordered the matter, that he gave me 20*l.* down, and gave me bond to pay 50*l.* more at the Birth of the Child. This, said Mrs. *Dorothy*, was the first of my adventures.

And this shall be the last I shall relate to you in this part, referring the prosecution of hers, and others adventures, to a third part.

FINIS.

WELLCOME LIBRARY INSTITUTE